

# ***STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL II***

*You CAN take it with you!*

The Complete Book On How To Remove Legal Disabilities

Reclaim ALL Of Your God Given Rights And Immunities

- 4: **And I heard another voice from heaven saying, “Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive of her plagues.**
- 5: **“For her sins have reached to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities.**
- 6: **“Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works, in the cup which she has mixed, mix for her double.**
- 7: **“In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and sorrow, ...”**

**Revelations 18:4-7 (NKJV)**

**The tested, legal remedies for canceling enslaving contracts and the commercial remedies for financial security and independence.**

**Burney Brushears**

# STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL II

*You CAN take it with you!*

*For the LORD is Our Judge, [Judicial Branch]  
the LORD is Our Lawgiver, [Legislative Branch]  
the LORD is Our King; [Executive Branch]  
He will save us.  
-Isaiah 33:22*

*“Because I have known the torment of thirst  
I would dig my well where others may drink.”  
- Ernest Thompson Seton*

*“Government is not reason; it is not eloquence; it is force!  
Like fire, it is a dangerous servant and a fearful master.”  
- George Washington*

“There is no such thing as a power of inherent Sovereignty in the government of the United States. In this country sovereignty resides in the people, and congress can exercise no power which they have not, by their Constitution entrusted to it: all else is withheld.”

Julliard v. Greenman, 110 US 421

**BURNEY BRUSHEARS**

## STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL II

*You CAN take it with you!*

Previously published under the Title  
*Man's Search For Sovereignty*

**COMMON-LAW COPYRIGHT by Burney Brushears**  
**No part of this book may be copied or reproduced in any**  
**manner without the expressed, written consent of the author.**

## PRINTING HISTORY

First Edition - October 1997

Second Edition – June 1998

Third Edition – September 1998

**Published by:**  
**GAMALIEL**  
**C/O P.O. Box 1160**  
**Why, Arizona 85321**

## DISCLAIMER

Due to the impossibility of meaningful Citizen control over the runaway bureaucracy and lack of the author's control over the use any information contained in this book, the author disclaims any liability for any loss incurred as a result of use or application of any information contained herein. When something good happens, thank *God* for the blessing!

All particulars in this book are believed by the author to be correct and have been researched to the best of his ability and access unless otherwise indicated.

This book contains legal research, personal opinions, and personal experiences of the author and it is not intended to be a substitute for professionally licensed services. This book is not intended to be a substitute for competent services of a licensed professional lawyer, accountant, doctor, minister, or pharmacist. The author encourages people who need the services of those official, governmentally licensed practitioners to seek their advice.

This is written for the edification of serious-minded, natural human People for assistance in understanding the nature of Sovereignty and Liberty.

All specific references and citations regarding federal, state, county, and municipal laws, statutes, codes and court cases that are found within Strategic Withdrawal are for educational and discussion purposes, only. It appears that due to the copyright on the "Revised Codes," "Statutes," and "Case Notes," using these proprietary properties that have been licensed for private use by the BAR association can cause one to be a tort-feasor and subject one to prejudicial treatment at the hands of the courts.

The text of the bills as passed by a body of persons elected by the people belongs to the people. When citing acts of legislature by the public law or bill number as passed on a certain day, a member of that constituency may claim ownership and no copyright infringement may be charged.

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS – *Man’s Search For Sovereignty*

I would like to publicly thank **God** for His inspiration and the motivation needed to write *Man’s Search for Sovereignty*. In addition, many *people* have contributed in their own, special ways to the completion of this work. **My wonderful wife** has had to deal with a lot of *my* frustration while I was spending weeks at sea in the Merchant Marine. When at home I worked on legal briefs and was not much company for her. She has kept the coffeepot on and has overseen our living conditions for many years. Because she is also a very bright lady, she has contributed in no small way to the form *and* content of *Man’s Search for Sovereignty*.

High on the list of contributors to this effort is my tall, strong, handsome **son**. Since my wife is of small stature, the heavier work (like changing propane tanks and filling water tanks) passed to my son while I was writing. He also assisted in proofreading, printing, and marketing.

The first editions of *Man’s Search for Sovereignty* were self-published without having been professionally edited. **Shirley Motsinger**, my editor, made many suggestions that helped make *Man’s Search for Sovereignty* more readable. She pointed out the need for a complete re-write of some of the information. Shirley is another very bright lady. With Shirley’s help, readers are getting the easiest to understand book on achieving the status of a Sovereign that is on the market today.

Several attorneys have helped me gain an understanding of the Internal Revenue Code and legal procedure. An Alaska Superior Court Judge and a U. S. District Court Judge taught me *never* to enter their courts again without the *complete* protection of the Constitution. Along the way there have been several people working within the legal system that have almost completely undone the damage caused by a Judiciary that has *no love* for true **JUSTICE**.

I would like to acknowledge the folk-singer **Carl Klang** for his outstanding gifts of insight and humor, which he shares (at bargain rates) with all who will listen. His music encouraged me *long* before we actually met. *My* nature gives me the humor of a ticking clock, but if you combine Carl’s *music* with my *writing*, you will not only grasp the concept of Sovereignty more quickly, you’ll be singing about it all day long. The International Banksters *hate* this man’s music. You’ll *love* it!

I’ve saved for last the acknowledgement of all the **Private Citizens** (they know who they are) from the Pacific Northwest who added the finishing touches to my understanding of Sovereignty. Their teaching method makes it easy to understand that, by the very *definition* of the word “**Sovereign**,” anyone desiring Sovereignty would have to *be able to stand on their own two feet*, financially, academically, and politically. *Sovereignty is not for the faint-hearted*. God created mankind in His own image with the nature of a Sovereign. Until we realize that *the person in the mirror* is the *only* one who can end the slavery, then we will remain slaves. With the help of **God**, the *Supreme* Sovereign, we can all live free and enjoy the blessings of liberty.

May God richly bless you,

**Burney E. Brushears**

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS – *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL*

I still have the same wife, son, and editor and they have continued to assist, support, and direct my progress in bringing this information on peace and prosperity to the public. They have continued in their dedication in spite of working, at times, under extremely adverse conditions. They will reap great rewards in paradise.

**Keith Anderson** donated the format for the independent service contract that is included in the appendices. This saved me the trouble of having one of Microsoft's independent contracts sent to me. Keith also contributed additional information on the Offshore Grantor Trusts as distributed by Anderson's Ark Associates. Keith is one of those men who seem destined for greatness. Keith has a real-life (not "degree-mill") college degree in business and business law and he writes the most competitively priced Trust that the IRS cannot break. He has a vast knowledge of the Bible. Keith views his entire outreach program as a ministry to bring prosperity to people who obey God's simple rules.

**Matt and Chuck Olsen**, sons of the creator of the **Citizen's Rule Book**, deserve special mention. They have assisted this first-time self-publisher by answering all of the questions that showed my ignorance of the real-world publishing industry. These men have a dedication factor that exceeds even that of bookstore owners and librarians. *Whitten Printers*, in Phoenix, Arizona, will most likely be the printers of all commercial editions of **STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL**. For the three years before I wrote *Strategic Withdrawal*, I would buy *Citizen's Rule Books* at least twenty-five at a time and give them to anyone that had enough patience to listen to me explain the concept of Sovereignty. I include the CRB with each copy of the book for two reasons. The first is that it assures me that the reader will have a copy of the Constitution. Second, the reader may become as enthusiastic as I am about the "little stick of dynamite" and begin ordering them at wholesale for his local patriotic group for resale at local and county fairs or, like I did, just to give away.

**Jack and Louise Cox** have been corresponding with me for years about everything from the legal procedure to Corporations Sole. Jack and Louise have assisted so much in my education that I wonder where I would be if God had not led me to them. Jack has assisted in the creation of several dozen Corporations Sole over the past few years, but the attorney that drew up the final draft of their Articles of Incorporation papers is now busy doing other things. I am finally getting an opportunity to do something for Jack and Louise!

I have saved for last the thanks I must give for the input provided by readers. Readers have sent addresses and Statutes for release of appointment. Many readers have also asked if they could sell the book for me. This is the most sincere form of complement for an author's work and it is music to my ears! Being *self-published* means that the author did not receive a large cash advance from a publisher. **STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL** is not only DeskTop published, it is *ShoeString* published, so I am constantly looking for new ways for the public to have access to the work.

Burney E. Brushears

## FOREWORD to Man's Search for Sovereignty

The founders of the American Nation and government were Christians and their inspiration to create this **Constitutional Republic** came from the Bible. Although much of their inter-branch, governmental theory was drawn from the "Civilized Tribes" of the American Indians, the understanding of their rights as Sovereign humans to select which government would best serve their needs was based in the Bible. Since the Bible remains the same and the "de facto" government has changed, it would be beneficial for Citizens who wish to enjoy the same "**blessings of liberty**" our forefathers enjoyed if they would study the source of our forefathers' inspiration. Although this is not primarily a religious work, since the founders of the American government depended upon the Bible, I also must depend upon the Bible to explain Sovereignty, how we lost it, how to regain it, and how to keep it. The best examples of *Man's Search for Sovereignty* (and his natural inclination to throw it away once he has it) are so ancient that they are most clearly stated in the Old Testament and only *alluded to* in the New Testament. There are many patriotic Americans in the "Jewish Community" who are as bewildered over their loss of freedom as Christians are. I have written *Man's Search for Sovereignty* in such a manner that they should find the principles of regaining Sovereignty easy to follow, even if they have been taught to have an aversion to studying the New Testament.

I recommend purchasing several books, which will greatly aid you in re-establishing and keeping your Sovereignty. First, you should have a copy of the **King James Version (KJV)** of the Bible near at hand. I recommend the KJV *not* because it is the best translation of the Bible, but because it is the best version to use with **Strong's Exhaustive Concordance**, which you should also have. Strong's is, without doubt, the best Bible research tool you can find anywhere, at any price. If you usually use a different translation of the Bible, then use the KJV to find the word in Strong's and then read that verse in your usual version. Or, when looking for verses that deal with a particular subject, look up the word in Strong's, find the verses in the KJV, then read the passage in your version. Judge by results. Do what works.

You'll also need **Black's Law Dictionary**. Black's gives the definitions of words and phrases as used in court and in legal documents. Before you file an affidavit or send off a bunch of documents to government agencies, you, and *only* you, are responsible for the meaning of every word in any document that bears your signature. Black's isn't expensive and it's interesting to browse through picking out legal maxims. Check out used bookstores. You should find yourself using the Law Dictionary on a regular basis. Education consists primarily of learning the meaning of different words. In order to educate yourself on Sovereignty, you should spend a little time in learning the LEGAL definitions of all of the words that are recommended on the list in the appendix.

The **Internal Revenue Code (IRC)**, also called **Title 26 United States Code (26 USC)**, is available in soft cover and consists of three volumes. Volume 3 is a history of amendments and isn't strictly needed. Volume 3 *can* be used to show that the dates Alaska and Hawaii were removed from the definition of "States" in IRC 7701 was when they became *Sovereign* states.

While you are ordering Strong's, Black's, and IRC Vols.1&2 you should also order a copy of **Federal CIVIL JUDICIAL PROCEDURE and RULES**. This volume is reasonably priced and contains the **Rules of Civil Procedure, Habeas Corpus, Admiralty, Supreme Court, Rules of Evidence**, and the entire **Title 28 USC**. You'll be looking up information in this book to assure yourself that what you are doing is *totally legal*.

You will need a copy of the U. S. Constitution and your State Constitution. You will also be directed to look up and copy some of the laws (State Statutes) of your state. The U. S. Constitution is being included in the form of the **Citizen's Rule Book** from Whitten Printers.

You should buy a three-ring notebook and begin saving copies of laws, rules, regulations, and court decisions you may find useful. You will *need* some things, like your state's laws on Release of Appointment. Although it is possible to succeed in voiding your SSN without the assistance of the books that I have recommend, these books will give you confidence that what you are doing is totally legal. You can also use them to show your friends (and especially your relatives) that you are in no danger of going to jail.

Since the purpose of *Man's Search for Sovereignty* is to show others how I ended *my* problems with the IRS and other quasi-government agencies, I have deliberately avoided using footnotes and turning this work into a real reference book. This is a "**How To:**" book based on *personal experience* and I share many sources of information and inspiration that directed me to finally use the procedure I used. I have listed some of *my* most valuable sources of assistance and information in the appendixes. Readers are encouraged to consult as many of these sources as their time and financial situation permits.

Every year or so the reader may wish to request an update on data and for a current price list for publications. As always, please include a business sized SASE.

If, after reading *Man's Search for Sovereignty* at least three times, a reader still fails to understand how to proceed with reclaiming Sovereign status, they may consult with the author via the mail. When requesting assistance, be sure to include a stamped, self-addressed envelope. To assure a quick answer, ask only a few questions in each letter and keep your questions short. It is usually best if you leave sufficient space between questions for the answer to be written directly on your own letter so the questions and answers don't get separated. Requests for information that don't follow the above guidelines may not be answered. If you need to write to the author more than three times, you may wish to include a donation with each request to ensure a prompt reply. The author may be reached by mail sent *in care of*:

**GAMALIEL**

C/O Box 1160

Why, Arizona 85321

*Whatever* you do, **PLEASE** don't begin reading, don't write an affidavit, and don't ask anyone *else* for assistance before you have asked *God* for His protection and to grant you wisdom. **DON'T FORGET TO PRAY.**

#### **Title-50 - War and National Defense § 783**

"It shall be unlawful for any person knowingly to combine, conspire, or agree with any other person to perform any act which would substantially contribute to the establishment within the United States of a totalitarian dictatorship, the direction and control of which is to be vested in, or exercised by or under the domination or control of, any foreign government."

"Person" would include politicians, lawyers, judges, and bureaucrats.

## FORWARD for *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL*

After some public exposure (both for the author and the book), it became apparent that the needs of the public could be better met with more information on *transition tools* and techniques than were included in *Man's Search for Sovereignty*. More information is included on Offshore Trusts and International Business Corporations.

*Man's Search for Sovereignty* was a qualified success. Although the distribution of the book did *not* run into the thousands, those people who *did* read the book are better able to accomplish their goals in reaching financial independence and Sovereignty. Because of the feedback from readers, future editions of *Man's Search for Sovereignty* will be published under the new title, *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL* – or – *You CAN take it with you!*

There are already enough books on the market that document the illegal activities by the government and the bureaucrats. I have read so many of them that they are beginning to fill my book shelves like Action/Adventure novels. Merely *knowing* that the bureaucrats are successfully ignoring the Bill of Rights and Declaration of Independence does not assist *me* in enjoying the Blessings of Liberty. *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL* was written to provide a *peaceful solution* for Patriots who are tired of reading newsletters and watching videos on government atrocities. From my wife and other members of the female persuasion, I learned that it is very important to have a peaceful, prosperous, and secure home. It is not a restful pursuit to watch our five videos on the Waco Holocaust and our video on the Oklahoma City re-enactment of the Reichstag fire. We now avoid “government atrocity” films and books. [see Philippians 4:8]

If the men in the modern Patriotic movement would spend a few hours a week observing the activities of the ladies in their life, they may learn some basic facts about survival that are not included in the tapes we buy from the Militia of Montana. God made Eve to be a helpmate for Adam. That was because, as men, we are so uni-directional in our thinking that we are blind to some of the basic needs for survival of the race. Our inclination is to forget everything else in our effort to beat a beast's brains out so we may drag it home for dinner. As warriors, we will pick up a rifle and walk out the door knowing that our chance of returning to our family is virtually non-existent. But we go anyway. This is how God made us. The race of Mankind could not survive if men did not gather food and defend the home and community, but *equally important* to the survival of the race are the ladies, who need a more secure, sedate, and peaceful environment in which to do their work. When I realized that the modern Patriotic movement was causing the ladies to become alienated from the cause, I began studying what to do to bring the Patriotic community back together. One goal of *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL* and the Strategic Withdrawal Seminars is to assist the Christian Patriots in America in becoming financially secure so their entire family will enjoy the Blessings of Liberty. If the family (including grandchildren) is prosperous and secure, the women will do everything within their power to *protect* that security, even if it means proudly watching their sons and husbands pick up their rifles and walk out the door. There is no inclination to fight if you have nothing of value to protect. *With* something to protect, the twentieth/twenty-first century woman will have the same fierce dedication that the women displayed during the war of separation from England. Instead of tension in our homes, we will be focused upon prosperity, peace, and security.

*STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL* will be supported by lectures and workshops anywhere there is sufficient interest. For information on workshops, call: (254) 725-4501.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

Legal Disclaimer .....	iii
Acknowledgements - <i>Man's Search For Sovereignty</i> .....	iv
Acknowledgements - <i>STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL</i> .....	v
Foreword to <i>Man's Search For Sovereignty</i> .....	vi
Foreword to <i>STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL</i> .....	viii
<b>1 — SELECTING THE SAFEST STRATEGY</b> .....	<b>1</b>
<b>2 — THE NOBLE EXPERIMENT THAT FAILED</b> .....	<b>5</b>
<b>3 — GREAT DEPRESSION, 3700 YEARS AGO</b> .....	<b>11</b>
<b>4 — WHERE I'M COMING FROM</b> .....	<b>15</b>
<b>5 — REAL SOVEREIGNS DON'T PAY TRIBUTE</b> .....	<b>19</b>
<b>6 — THE BLESSINGS OF LIBERTY</b> .....	<b>25</b>
<b>7 — FINANCIAL IDENTITY OF GOD'S PEOPLE</b> .....	<b>33</b>
<b>8 — GET OUT AND VOTE?</b> .....	<b>35</b>
<b>9 — GOD GAVE US OUR COMMON LAW</b> .....	<b>39</b>
<b>10 — PITFALLS IN THE COURTS</b> .....	<b>41</b>
<b>11 — HISTORY OF BANKING AND CREDIT</b> .....	<b>51</b>
<b>12 — THE TANGLED WEB OF CONTRACTS</b> .....	<b>59</b>
<b>13 — DEVELOPING YOUR STRATEGY</b> .....	<b>75</b>
<b>14 — UNTANGLING THE WEB</b> .....	<b>79</b>
<b>15 — DEALING WITH DEBT</b> .....	<b>99</b>
<b>16 — MAKING IT EASY ON YOURSELF</b> .....	<b>105</b>
<b>17 — YOU ARE WHO YOU SAY YOU ARE</b> .....	<b>115</b>
<b>18 — ¡FELIZ VIAJE! – HAVE A HAPPY TRIP</b> .....	<b>121</b>
<b>I — AFFIDAVIT OF CITIZENSHIP</b> .....	<b>128</b>
<b>II — REVOKE SIGNATURE, 1040'S</b> .....	<b>131</b>
<b>III — REVOKE SIGNATURE, BANK CARD</b> .....	<b>132</b>

IV — REVOKE SIGNATURE, SS-5-----	133
V — RELEASE FROM SOCIAL SECURITY -----	134
VI — REVOKE TRUST ON AUTOS-----	136
VII — COVER LETTER, IRS-----	137
VIII — COVER LETTER, BANKS-----	138
IX — COVER LETTER, SSA -----	139
X — COVER LETTER FOR AUTOS -----	140
XI — DISTRICT DIRECTOR LETTER -----	143
XII — NO WITHHOLDING LETTER -----	144
XIII — SOCIAL SECURITY RESPONSE -----	146
XIV — SSA REPLY, NO LAW REQUIRES A SSN -----	148
XV — GENERIC NOTICE AND DEMAND-----	150
XVI — CERTIFICATE OF MAILING -----	151
XVII — CHECKLIST-----	152
XVIII — FREE OR SLAVE? -----	153
XIX — DEFINITIONS -----	154
XX — DIRECTED RESEARCH-----	155
XXI — ADDITIONAL READING, <i>ANNOTATED</i> -----	158
XXII — ADDRESSES FOR INFORMATION -----	159
XXIII — WEBSITES AND E-MAIL ADDRESSES-----	162
XXIV — SCRIPTURAL SUPPORT -----	165
XXV — SAMPLE CONTRACT -----	168
XXVI — STATE STATUTES -----	171

# 1 — SELECTING THE SAFEST STRATEGY

The purpose of *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL* is to assist others who may have had problems with the IRS or other quasi-governmental agencies and to explain the strategy that has been used by many People for completely withdrawing ourselves from those problems, *peacefully*. The procedures do not violate any laws and the IRS does not classify us as “illegal tax protesters.” You made a wise investment in buying *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL* and I sincerely hope it has not cost you too dearly before you made the decision to study this procedure. If I had known in 1987 the procedures I am now passing along to you, I could have saved thousands of hours of legal research and many thousands of dollars. I have been quite open in what I have done and I am no longer suffering any government harassment. The IRS and Social Security Administration were the first places to receive copies of my paperwork.

I keep my friends informed of whatever I learn about the IRS and other government contracts and consent forms. Some of these friends *talk* as if they believe the procedure is sound, but they never turn in their SSN card. Others, for some strange reason, seem to *want* to pay the tribute money and fund the tyranny of a runaway government. Some of my friends have only gone part of the way. They sent in some affidavits, but they began using their SSN’s again to apply for benefits. They don’t use them for employment, but other benefits, such as bank accounts, did require the SSN. I am also pleased to report that thousands of others have been following these procedures for as long as fifteen years and they are having *no legal problems*.

Some people refuse to believe that the remedy for IRS slavery could be as simple as revoking all of their contracts with the government and canceling all of the consent forms they have signed. These people will say, “*That’s just a formality*” or “*That’s being legalistic*” or “*That’s just paperwork*.” Evidently, they think there is such a thing as a *trivial* contract. Since contracts are more powerful than law, this is like straddling a barbed wire fence with both feet on patches of ice. If they don’t get on one side of the fence or the other very soon they may end up damaged for life. It is the same as in real life, some people will succeed and others will just gripe.

That there is a market for a book of this type and that *you* feel the need to explore this kind of information shows the breadth and depth of American’s need to learn how to make a *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL* into Sovereignty out of their present state of enslavement. Many attempts have been made in recent years to regain the proper Sovereign/servant relationship with the government but most of those procedures have failed miserably. By the time a Citizen has reached the level of desperation where he feels the need to purchase *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL*, it is almost certain that he will have investigated other tax and/or Social Security avoidance procedures. The failures in some of those procedures have cost billions in IRS fines and penalties and have only served to increase the *appearance* of power wielded by the International Bankers through the IRS, Federal Reserve (The Fed), and International Monetary Fund (IMF).

By the time you have finished reading *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL*, you will know *why* the other procedures have failed and where the IRS gets its *illusion* of power. Like many government illusions, however, this one has the power to inspire willing compliance to their desires (through threat, intimidation, and harassment). This book was written to share the information that I am using on how to separate *yourself* from their system with the least amount of personal pain and agony and to make that separation permanent. *It is encouraging to know*

*that the Sovereign who taught me the final elements of this procedure has not been contacted by any government agency since 1985.*

The American Nation was founded by intelligent and dedicated men who looked upon the Bible as *the Rule and Guide of their faith*. In the Bible, they discovered that mankind had the right to govern himself, under God's authority alone. The Bibles they studied, incidentally, were **not** the four Versions Authorized by King James. They used either the **Geneva Bible** (from same manuscripts as KJV & NKJV) or the **Wycliffe Bible** (from same manuscripts as RSV & Douay). Abraham Lincoln's quote "*of the people, by the people, for the people*" came from Wycliffe's 1381 version. The Pilgrims came to Plymouth Rock about the time King James was having his version of the Bible translated. Since the early Americans did not have high-speed copiers and FAX machines, the KJV was not in wide circulation until many years after it was "Authorized" in 1611. The Bible provided the foundation for our American Common Law and for our ancestors' search for freedom. It is *our* best source of inspiration, too.

Christians will use the phrase "*God's Word sets us free,*" but not one professing Christian out of a hundred can even tell us what freedom is. One of the purposes of **STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL** is to explain the parts of the Bible that our forefathers understood, but we have overlooked for so many years. We will also look at some historical examples of how ancient individuals and societies lost their Sovereignty and how we may regain our own *personal* Sovereignty by using completely lawful and scriptural procedures.

If you believe in God then it follows that you believe He has a jurisdiction. If He has a jurisdiction then He must *have had* the power to create it and *have* the power to enforce it. In this book, you will learn how to make a *strategic withdrawal* out of the jurisdiction of man into the jurisdiction of God and claim His protection and blessings.

#### CREATION, OWNERSHIP, AND SERVITUDE

If *you* build something then it belongs to *you*. Any created thing is the property of the creator of that thing. There is a basic principle of the universe that *any created thing* (the creature) *owes its servitude to its creator*. God created mankind. He had a reason for creating us. God expects very little from us. He wants our love, our fear, our respect, our obedience, our gratitude, and our dependency. If I were to build a small boat, that boat would serve my needs until I did not need it any more. If I created a hamburger, that hamburger would spend its entire (short!) existence serving my needs. If the boat did not satisfy my expectations or if the hamburger tasted like cardboard, would it not be within my rights as their creator to dismantle or destroy them?

A popular discussion among people who have *either* not read the Bible *or* have never critically analyzed its content is whether or not a loving God could condemn someone to an eternal hell. Please stick with me on this, no matter which side of the fence you are on, because the principle of choice involved is important to the issue of Sovereignty. Because we are created beings, we owe our servitude to our Creator. The other option to whom we may give our servitude is God's adversary. There are no other options available. It is a simple choice we make between only two systems. Another basic principle of the universe is that *in making any choice, we are automatically bound to accept ALL the results of that choice, be they pleasing or displeasing*. It was God who gave us our freedom of choice, not the decision in Roe v. Wade. We have a simple choice to make based upon the results we wish to enjoy.

If we wish to enjoy the *results* offered by an earthly government, we should willingly *serve* the earthly government. If we wish to enjoy the *results* offered by God, we should *serve Him*. It does not appear to be either *intellectually honest* or *logically sound* to obey the rules of

one system and expect the benefits of the other system. In acting as a mature adult, we should make an *informed decision* based on the desired result and then see our decision through to the end. If we desire the result promised to those who are obedient to God's laws, then we will study and keep God's laws. If we desire the rewards offered by earthly governments, then we should willingly serve and *obey* that government, *pay* the tribute, and *quit sniveling*. This brings up another basic principle, which is; - ***We show who our God is by who's law we study and keep.*** This principle is only an extension of the principles of ownership by creation and the principle of choice.

### A FEW WORDS ABOUT BANKRUPTCY

Newcomers into the modern Patriot movement often overlook the effect of U.S. bankruptcy. Americans have been taught since their youth that the government has an unlimited supply of money because all they have to do is print it. First of all, the government does not issue the Federal Reserve Notes. A private banking cartel that holds the bankruptcy note on the United States (Federal Reserve Board) issues those FRN and they are not *money*. The FRN's are *evidence of bad debt*.

Every society has a means of protecting itself against people who habitually make bad debts. If someone that habitually defaults on his obligations offers to buy your house or your business, you have a right of having protection against that individual taking your property and selling it to others without paying you for it. In the United States, the *remedy* is called "Bankruptcy." Society protects itself by *disabling* the incompetent person's *legal rights* for managing their own affairs. All management of that person's affairs is placed in the hands of a "receiver in bankruptcy" or a "bankruptcy trustee." The bankrupt individual or business may not acquire, hold, or convey title to any property, real or personal, without permission from the bankruptcy trustee. The ***legally disabled person*** has no more charge over his or her own affairs. The bankrupt person may not buy, sell, or hold a job without permission from the bankruptcy trustee. Doesn't the description of bankruptcy sound suspiciously like the description of the effect of taking the "Mark of the Beast" in the book of Revelations?

When the United States publicly admitted Bankruptcy on March 9, 1933, the bankruptcy trustee for all United States property has been the "Secretary of the Treasury." The title "Secretary of the Treasury" was abolished in the mid 1940's and the title was changed to "United States Governor of [meaning, *for*] the International Monetary Fund." All property and business of the U.S. Government is under the direct control of, not Congress, but the *un-elected* Secretary of the Treasury.

Every "state" in the United States is participating in the repayment of Washington, DC's debt. Gamaliel recommends that all people obtain a recent copy of their state budget. You will notice that a deposit was made into a thing called a "Trust Fund." Usually there is very little else in the Title to describe this fund. It may even be called by another name. *ALWAYS*, there are deposits, but *NEVER* are there any withdrawals. These funds are the state's share of the U.S. bankruptcy payments.

### WHAT DOES ALL THIS ABOUT BANKRUPTCY HAVE TO DO WITH ME?

The way that the states levy and collect the funds for deposit into the "trust fund" is through license/user fees and through fines for infraction of statutory edict. These fines cannot be levied upon anyone *not owing the debt*, because that would be unfair. The fines, levies, user fees, and licenses fees are all forms of "tax" as proven in John Freeman's excellent legal brief on TRAVEL BY RIGHT, which is distributed by Gamaliel in annotated form, with commentary.

The *taxes* are owed by the *United States* in order to pay off the debts of the bankruptcy. *So, who is the United States?* Let's look in the law books and see.

Title 4 USC, § 71 and 72 limit the seat of government of the United States to the ten miles square called Washington, D.C. and stipulate that the jurisdiction of the United States may not exceed those boundaries except as expressly provided by law. Title 4 USC §§ 104-113 are called the "Buck Act." The Buck Act allows any *Federal Agency* [under the control of the Secretary of the Treasury] to draw lines within the geographic boundaries of any State and *exercise jurisdiction* over that geographic area. This is an end-run around Title 4 USC 71 & 72. When a person claims "residency" *within* these federal jurisdictions, they are claiming a responsibility for paying off the U.S. bankruptcy. Prima Facie evidence of residency can be as simple as using a zip code in your address.

A note is in order, here, about the usage of the words "*Federal Agency*" in the Buck Act. In Title 28 USC § 3002(15) the term "United States" includes any federal *corporation*, federal *agency*, or *instrumentality of the United States*. The "*Agency*" that exercises jurisdiction under the Buck Act *is the United States*, by and through the Secretary of the Treasury, who is a wholly-owned, bought-and-paid-for, stooge for the International Monetary Fund.

A legal "*instrument*" is any written document such as a contract, deed, or a lease. An "*instrumentality*" is the person who is obligated upon and/or by the instrument. When your name is on an instrument called a Social Security Card, voter registration card, or driver's license, you are the *instrumentality* obligated by that instrument. Because *you* are the bankrupt United States, *you* have no right to buy, own, or use property. You are subject to taxation and regulation in the form of traffic fines, user fees, licenses, and so forth. The *remedy* is the rescission of the contracts and instruments. You now possess the most authoritative work on the process of rescinding those instruments.

#### MOTIVATION THEORY

Most of us have heard about the "carrot and stick" approach to motivation. Let's suppose that you are trying to get a donkey to pull a cart. "Carrot and stick" works like this: By tying a carrot to the end of a stick and holding the carrot in front of the donkey, he is supposed to move in the direction you want him to pull the cart. The variables are:

1. How juicy is the carrot?
2. How long is the stick?
3. How hungry is the donkey?

An example of the "carrot and stick" approach among Christians can be found in **Galatians 5:19-26** and **Philippians 4:7-9**. Whereas all "excess" income is taken away from SSN holders, they have a state guarantee that all elderly people will *suffer equally* until they die. The Sovereign Citizens of God's jurisdiction, on the other hand, are blessed with the right to prosper to the limit of their abilities. Sovereigns are given very few, unchanging rules to live by. They are promised peace, joy, and prosperity in this life *and* the next. From my point of view (being a very hungry Sovereign) that looks like a very juicy carrot on the end of a very short stick.

With these principles and ideas in mind we can now look at man's government and what the Bible says our attitude toward government should be.

## 2 — THE NOBLE EXPERIMENT THAT FAILED

Hosea 4:6

The founding fathers of America did their very best to give us a government that could guarantee us Liberty and keep us free, but even they could foresee failure. One of the founding fathers responded to the question, "What kind of government have you given us?" with the answer, "A Republic, if you can keep it." President John Adams said, "**Our Constitution was made only for a religious and moral people. It is wholly inadequate for the government of any other.**" President Andrew Jackson said, "**The Bible is the Rock on which our Republic rests.**" George Washington said, "**The people know it is impossible to rightly govern without God and the Bible.**" Daniel Webster said, "**If we abide by the principles taught in the Bible, our country will go on prospering.**"

In recent years, the media, the school systems, and even some people who call themselves patriots, have tried to get us to believe that the founders of our nation were freethinkers, agnostics, and/or atheists. There are even some people within the "Patriot Movement" that are writing and lecturing that some of our founding fathers worshiped Lucifer (the Devil). When we take an objective look at the lives and writings of these men, we find that the vast majority of them were honest, God-fearing men. They gave us the best government that any *men* have ever created on the face of this Earth because that government was our servant, not our master. The Nation given to us by the founding fathers has not failed us, we have failed IT, by rejecting God and elevating our servant to the position of master.

God was certainly at work in the founding of our nation. The reason, I believe, is because the Declaration of Independence, declaring that Mankind is endowed by his Creator with Rights, reversed the curse placed upon mankind in First Samuel 8:18. God was working among our forefathers, but the evil one was active, as well. There are two fatal flaws in the constitution that will become as obvious to the reader as it is to the writer. These flaws are in the giving of exclusive jurisdiction over Washington, DC to a body of men and the inclusion of unspecified, prior Treaties as the "Supreme Law of the Land." These provisions were deliberately placed in the constitution by men that understood man's weaknesses. We will discuss these flaws, and the remedy, for the rest of the book.

The writers of the Universal Declaration (Declaration of Independence) recognized that God had endowed mankind with certain **UNALIENABLE** rights. The word was *not* "*inalienable*." The word "inalienable" was not invented until long after 1776. Breaking down the prefixes, the root word, and the suffix of the word "**unalienable**," we find "un-a-**LIEN**-able" (pronounced "un-uh-**LIEN**-able", not "un-*alien*-able"). The root word is *lien* and the prefixes cause a negation of effectiveness. When these word-parts are so arranged as they are in "unalienable," they create a word meaning, "*a lien may not be placed against*" these rights. These rights cannot be taken from us **by act of law** [**Miranda v Arizona, 384 US 436, 491**]. Bouvier's Law Dictionary defines "**unalienable**" as being a right that one person may not lawfully transfer to another, yet the word "**consent**" in Black's Law Dictionary means a *yielding* of a *right* to someone else. Breaking down "unalienable" into its separate syllables showed us that where Bouvier's definition used the word "*lawfully*," they should have used the phrase "*be compelled by law*" to transfer to another.

To help define the rights of free men, the authors of the Declaration of Independence studied the Scriptures, therefore, for us to know *our* rights; **WE** must study the Bible, also. To find our proper relationship with the State and Federal Governments, we study the State and

Federal Constitutions. In the U. S. Constitution, amendments 9 and 10, we learn that we have many rights not listed in the first eight amendments. **Roe v. Wade** was, essentially, a ninth amendment case. We also find the U. S. Government only has *powers* granted to it BY THE PEOPLE. The people granted no *rights* to the government. There are only twenty-two *powers* granted to the federal government. These are the so-called "*enumerated powers*." If the federal government has so little legal power, then why do I feel intimidated? Where do they get the authority to run so roughshod over my rights? How could they get away with burning down the Branch Davidian church near Waco, Texas? How could they assault the Weaver family on their own land in Idaho, killing a young mother and shooting her 14-year-old son in the back? How did they get away with *dropping a bomb* on the MOVE church and burning down a whole city block? We will find out how.

**John Adams**, the second president of the united States, said, "*You have rights antecedent to all earthly governments; rights that cannot be repealed or restrained by human laws; rights derived from the Great Legislator of the Universe.*" In the Constitution and other founding documents of the American Government, the government was *never* described as having *rights*. *Rights* are recognized as being given by God to mankind. The federal and state governments were given limited grants of *power*. All State Constitutions make the declaration that, "... *all political power is inherent in the people.*" We can therefore understand that the Federal and State Constitutions are *limited grants of power*, **not** declarations of God's Seal of Authority on the *rights* of earthly governments to subjugate mankind (a misinterpretation of Romans, Chapter 13).

In 1803 the supreme Court (it is interesting to note that in the Constitution, the word *supreme* is **not** capitalized, but *Behavior* is!) handed down a decision on a controversy between President James Madison and Mr. Marbury, a political appointee. The case cite is **Marbury v. Madison**, 5 US (2 Cranch) 137, 174, 176 (1803). In this decision, the supreme Court said, "*All laws which are repugnant to the Constitution are null and void.*" It does **not** say, "*All contracts which are repugnant to the Constitution are null and void.*" It does **not** say, "*All consent forms which are repugnant to the Constitution are null and void.*"

Another landmark case was **Norton v. Shelby County** found in 118 US 425. On page 442, the supreme Court decision said "*An unconstitutional act is not law; it confers no rights; it imposes no duties; affords no protection; it creates no office; it is in legal contemplation, as inoperative as though it had never been passed.*" Any law that may have been passed that would interfere with our right to contract would be null and void. Our right to contract into the jurisdiction of the IRS, Social Security, and Washington DC is protected by the constitution.

In **volume 16 of American Jurisprudence, 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition, §§ 177 and 256** you will find "*the general rule is that an unconstitutional statute, though having the form and name of law, is in reality no law, but is wholly void, and ineffective for any purpose; since unconstitutionality dates from the time of its enactment, and not merely from the date of the decision so branding it.*" and "*No one is bound to obey an unconstitutional law and no courts are bound to enforce it.*" But the government *is* required to refrain from *interfering* in obligations of contracts.

Thus we can see by the above supreme Court rulings, which have never been overturned, and by the official rule book by which the laws of our country are interpreted, that the American Citizen enjoys the best protection of his God-given rights of any human on the face of this earth.

Because most Americans no longer enjoy even the rights specified in the first eight amendments, then *what is wrong with the Constitution?* What I have discovered, through pain, agony, financial strain, and research is that **NOTHING is wrong!** **SOVEREIGN** Americans still

have the same freedoms they have always had. No *law* prohibits our carrying fully automatic, military style weapons, concealed or in the open, on our person, or mounted on the roll bar of our jeep, on the streets of any city in the nation (except Washington, DC). No *law* requires us to pay income tax or social security taxes. No *law* requires us to seek permission (get a license) to freely use the public thoroughfares. No *law* prohibits our building any structure we wish without regard to "zoning ordinances" *as long as we actually own the property*. These rights have been voluntarily *given up* through *contract*, not *taken from us* by *law*. We get these rights *back* by going through the correct *legal procedure* to break the contracts.

You won't see the words "**contract**" or "**consent**" mentioned anywhere in Marbury v. Madison, Norton v. Shelby County, Miranda v. Arizona, or in the above citation from **16 Am Jur 2d**. because, as a Sovereign OVER the laws of this country, *you are presumed to be intelligent enough to decide f yorourself whether you wish to compromise one of your God-given rights in return for a benefit you are seeking in a contract*. The limited powers that our forefathers gave to the government *did not* include impairing our right to contract [Art 1 § 10], because *we are the Sovereigns and the government is our servant*.

By the time Americans are twenty-one years old, most of them have signed literally *hundreds* of declarations that they are subject to the jurisdiction of Washington, D.C. (the incorporated city called the United States). When they get a little older and see how much uncontrolled power the IRS has, some of them rebel and join tax-protest groups. It is a very short time between being officially identified as a "tax protester" and the time when all of those declarations of U.S. citizenship come back to haunt you by biting a big chunk out of your bank account, if not actually putting you in jail. The IRS moves decisively against tax protesters.

Every once in a while, when court revenue drops off, someone is allowed to win a tax case by using some off-the-wall *legal* argument. Word gets out that this is how you win against the IRS and the fines, penalties, and court revenues *skyrocket* for the next few years because all of these contract-laden, bankrupt, *subjects of the government* come into court and argue *LAW* and the judge renders his decision based on the *CONTRACTS* they have signed. No matter what *legal* arguments you use, winning a suit against the IRS is a matter of *pure luck*, since *contras ctalways* supersede law. It sure gives the IRS the appearance of having a lot of *legal* power, though, doesn't it?

There is a section of the Internal Revenue Code called the "*anti injunction act*." The anti injunction act states that you cannot appeal an assessment until *after* you have paid the tax. I asked an attorney about the anti-injunction act and he explained the logic behind the code in this manner, "*If you owe a tax, you have to pay the tax. Regardless of what other tragedies may occur, you still must pay the tax. If you owe a debt, you must pay it.*" When a person bound by the *contract* known as his Social Security Number contests an income tax assessment with *legal* arguments, it is the same as jumping through a second story window and saying, "I don't want to fall."

If a law is passed and someone breaks it, the person is punished. If someone signs a contract and does not *perform* up to the *specifications* of the contract, they are not punished; they are compelled to *specific performance*. That is the difference between *law* and *contract*. That is one way you can tell law and contract apart, - by the result of violating them. They *punish* you if you break a law but they *force you to live up to your obligations* (specific performance) if you violate a contract. The SS-5 form is only *one* of the *hundreds* of sneaky little contracts you have signed granting federal jurisdiction over your person and property. They ALL come back to bite you when you confront any governmental agency. By voiding all

the contracts and *never asking for benefits*, you pull all their teeth.

Most Americans “toe the line” for the IRS and other revenue collecting agencies out of confusion and fear. They know in their hearts that something “just ain’t quite right” about our liberties being gone, but they are confused because no one seems to be able to explain exactly how we lost our rights or how to get them back. Readers’ Digest and TV pseudo-documentaries such as “60 Minutes” and “20/20” have carried segments on how the government is raking in millions of dollars in “*civil forfeitures*” and “*administrative assessments*” and how Citizens don’t have a prayer in the world of being granted a hearing on having the money returned. Citizens seem to have no remedy, so the confusion begins to change into a little, nagging fear in the back of their minds. *How can I possibly fight the State Police or the IRS when they have that much power?* The answer is this: All of the civil forfeitures and administrative assessments are contractual procedures. Yes, **ALL** of them. The civil forfeiture revenue game that is being played under the **R.I.C.O. Act** (Racketeering In Corrupt Organizations Act) in the airports and on the highways is not played like it would first appear. They *do* know their target. If they were to pull me over for a roadside shakedown, because I am not in their computers, they would let me go. If they pulled me into one of their secret rooms in the airport, they would check my ID and let me go. I have voided all my contracts and they have no means (other than terrorism) to compel performance. When a law enforcement situation becomes a little tense for members of the Sovereign community, we ask the policemen to radio their dispatcher for instructions. The dispatcher usually contacts a judge or lawyer, who then instructs the police to turn us loose.

The old movie, “WAR GAMES” ended with the punch line, “**The only winning move is not to play.**” That is how we win against the IRS, Federal Reserve, and IMF. *We quit playing the game.* We do not sign any more contracts and we use the correct legal procedure to void the contracts we have been defrauded into signing and then we are free Sovereigns. If everyone in the world followed our example, we would prosper (laborers being producers), and the bankers and lawyers would wither up and blow away since they are only parasites. They took all the funding for their tyranny from us, their willing, voluntary, gullible subjects. The poor bankers would starve because no one would borrow their credit any more. We would end both our fear and our slavery at the very same time.

God is the author of freedom of choice. This freedom of choice is written into the U. S. Constitution in **Article I, § 10** as “. . .*no state shall . . .pass any . . .law impairing the obligation of contracts. . .*” A contract, therefore, is *superior to law*. When you sign your name, it is entirely possible to give up every God given right you ever had. ***There can be no such thing as a trivial contract.*** For the non-religious, there is the aspect of *specific or substantial performance* that can be required on *all* contracts. If a deeply religious individual were to tell you, “*That’s just a technicality*” you might remind him that a contract is an agreement to which he has given his word. **To break his word is to lie.** I cannot imagine how an individual who claims to be religious can knowingly *have* a Social Security Card, ***not pay*** what he owes to the IRS, and still believe that he is righteous.

If you work in a “high-tech” industry, you have to sign a “non-disclosure” contract before you begin work. This contract prohibits you from disclosing trade secrets about your employer’s products and plans both while employed and for a stipulated period of time after you leave the company. If, during the time covered by the contract, you decide to earn a little extra cash by giving lectures and writing books on your employer’s trade secrets, you would most likely find yourself in court. If your “**affirmative defense**” against prosecution was your Constitutional right to free press or free speech, the judge would make quick work of you. The

judge would want to know:

1. Did you sign the contract?
2. Did the company pay you as agreed? and,
3. Did you disclose information covered in the contract during the time covered by the contract?

If your answers are "yes" then you will automatically suffer the penalty stipulated in the contract. If your answer to question #2 is, "No, they didn't pay me as agreed" then the judge may be a bit more lenient, but don't count on it.

We will find that virtually ALL of our apparent "loss of liberty" and "erosion of rights" have *not* come through law, but through **CONTRACT**. We will also realize that many so-called "laws" which are passed are not actually laws but "*bankruptcy regulations*" or "*contractual offers*." Since an *unlimited* right to contract would, necessarily, include the right *not* to contract, *and* since a contract is valid only if entered into intentionally, knowingly, and voluntarily then we are under no obligation to sign our name. ***A contract signed under duress is null and void.*** Either we did not have sufficient knowledge to retain our liberty and rights or we did not place a high enough value on our liberty and rights to make the effort to keep them. Which is it?

No government can force you to contract with them. *Can they force you to get a fishing license?* No. You have to sign a contract to get a fishing license. *Can they force you to get a driver's license?* No. You have to sign a contract to get a driver's license. *Can they force you to buy insurance?* No. You have to sign a contract with an insurance company to get insurance. *Can they restrict your right to go fishing for food for your table?* No. You have the right to *life*, liberty, and property and, since you did not sign away that right in a fishing license contract, you have retained that right. *Can they restrict your right to travel on the public thoroughfares?* No. You have not given up the free right to travel by signing the contract for the license. Since a coerced contract is invalid and you have not contracted away the rights, you are free. *But, does it really work? Is this just another scam?* Yes, it works, and no, I am not scamming you. But it is *very* important how you go about asserting your rights, so keep reading.

What has happened in America is that the people have "rejected knowledge" and God has rejected them. Since Americans have forgotten the Law of God, He will also forget us *and our children*. Hosea 4:6 is the unadulterated truth. But is it any wonder that it *looks* as if our *rights* are being ***taken*** away?

We have been tempted and seduced by government agencies and private corporations into contracting away the liberty that God wants US to enjoy. Luckily, God has promised us that with every temptation there will be a way of escape [**First Corinthians 10:13**].

The next thing we will do is explore a historical model predating our own loss of Sovereignty and see what *we* can do that is in harmony with the Bible and the laws of the land that will *restore* that lost Sovereignty.

"All the perplexities, confusion, and distress in America arise, not from defects in the Constitution or Confederation, not from want of honor or virtue, so much as from downright ignorance of the nature of coin, credit and circulation." - President John Adams

"I believe where God is omitted, then evil will be committed." - James Traficant

## GENESIS 47:13-26

**13:** And there was no bread in all the land; for the famine was very sore, so that the land of Egypt and all the land of Canaan fainted by reason of the famine.

**14:** And **Joseph gathered up all the money** that was found in the land of Egypt, and in the land of Canaan, for the corn which they bought: and **Joseph brought the money into Pharaoh's house.**

**15:** And when **money failed** in the land of Egypt, and in the land of Canaan, all the Egyptians came unto Joseph, and said, Give us bread: for why should we die in thy presence? for **the money faileth.**

**16:** And Joseph said, Give your cattle; and I will give you for your cattle, ***IF money fail.***

**17:** And they brought their cattle unto Joseph: and Joseph gave them bread in exchange for horses, and for the flocks, and for the cattle of the herds, and for the asses: and he fed them with bread for all their cattle for that year.

**18:** When that year was ended, they came unto him the second year, and said unto him, We will not hide it from my lord, how that our money is spent; my lord also hath our herds of cattle; **there is not ought left** in the sight of my lord, **but our bodies, and our lands:**

**19:** Wherefore shall we die before thine eyes, both we and our land? **buy us and our land** for bread, and we and our land will be servants unto Pharaoh: and give us seed, that we may live, and not die, that the land be not desolate.

**20:** And Joseph **bought all the land of Egypt for Pharaoh;** for the Egyptians sold every man his field, because the famine prevailed over them: so the land became Pharaoh's.

**21:** And as for the people, he **removed them to cities** from one end of the borders of Egypt even to the other end thereof.

**22:** Only the **land of the priests bought he not;** for the priests had a portion assigned them of Pharaoh, and did eat their portion which Pharaoh gave them: wherefore they sold not their lands.

**23:** Then **Joseph** said unto the people, Behold, **I have bought you this day and your land** for Pharaoh: lo, **here is seed** for you, and ye shall sow the land.

**24:** And it shall come to pass in the increase, that **ye shall give the fifth part unto Pharaoh,** and four parts shall be your own, for seed of the field, and for your food, and for them of your households, and for food for your little ones.

**25:** And they said, Thou hast saved our lives: **let us find grace in the sight of my lord,** and we will be Pharaoh's servants.

**26:** And Joseph made it a law over the land of Egypt unto this day, that Pharaoh should have the fifth part; **except the land of the priests only, which became not Pharaoh's.**

Relevant portions have been printed in bold and/or italics. [Author]

### 3 — GREAT DEPRESSION, 3700 YEARS AGO

Genesis 47:13-26

When studying the Bible reference for this Chapter, you noticed in verse 13 that there was a famine brought on the land of Egypt. Until the time of the famine, the Egyptian farmers were free Sovereigns on their own land who paid no taxes. They owned their land and *all* that it produced.

In verse 14, we see a deliberately contrived depression caused by the drying up of the money supply. As was the Great Depression in the 1930's, this one was deliberately caused by foreign interests and a greedy tyrant who acted in their own self-interest to accomplish their own agenda. It was done with the full knowledge and cooperation of the legitimate government. The depression was not caused by the famine. The depression was caused by Joseph and the Pharaoh deliberately drying up the money supply. After gathering up the money, in verse 16 Joseph says, "**IF** money fail." Now isn't that just like a politician? He said this *after* he *caused* the money to be gathered up. Joseph and the Pharaoh used their foreknowledge of the famine to *their benefit* and to the *people's hurt*. If the government had been of the people, by the people, and for the people, the government would have promoted the general welfare, but instead, there was insider trading.

Verse 15 finds the Egyptians turning to the Pharaoh (earthly government) in time of need instead of turning to God. Joseph had directed Pharaoh's men to buy and store all surplus grain during the good years. What sort of advertising campaign did Pharaoh use to achieve what happened next? Franklin D. Roosevelt said, "*If it happens in politics, you can be sure that it was planned that way.*"

The Egyptian farmers traded all of their beasts of burden and livestock to the Pharaoh for food for one year. Why didn't they eat them? Verse 16 came back to life in the 1930's with the Agriculture Reconstruction Acts under FDR. The Egyptians finally sold their land, their bodies, and their children to the Pharaoh, forever, in return for the benefits he could provide for them. This is an exact parallel to the Social Security Act. The word "*servant*," incidentally, could today more accurately be translated "*slave*." [Strong's Exhaustive Concordance] In verse 21, we see the people being moved off the farms and into the cities. In the 1930's this was called the "**Urban Movement**" as the banks began to foreclose on mortgages and Americans were herded off the farms and into the cities to form the labor pool required to produce the war machinery for WW2.

Perhaps the most interesting and informative verse in this chapter is verse 22. Here we see that the priests, already having a secure food supply, had *no need* to sell their land, their bodies, or their children to the Pharaoh. Thus, the Pharaoh and his priests were the only private, non-taxed landowners in all of Egypt. There have always been a certain number of private landowners in the united States, also. You may verify this by checking with your county land tax officer and asking for a map of the county showing how many parcels of land in your county are not taxed. They may even have a list showing the names and addresses of the "*freeholders*."

Since the Pharaoh now owned the land and all the seed, we see in verse 24 how he also had the right to divide the harvest. This is another universal Principle. ***ONLY the owner of the pie has the right to divide the pie.*** As we will find out later on, because the government owns all of our paycheck, *they* have the right to divide it up - so much for IRS, so much for Social Security, and what is left over is for you and your little ones.

The government owns your entire paycheck; otherwise, *you* would be the one who could divide it. If you doubt this for a minute, just think back to the nineteen seventies when all the “smart investors” were looking for “tax shelters.” The Treasury made some *administrative rulings* denying the shelters as deductions although the deductions were made in good faith under current IRS regulations. The IRS took their money by levying and seizing **all** sources of **income**, the **bank accounts**, and the **property** of the unfortunate investors. Furthermore, they took it without a court order! *Is it possible anyone still doubts that the government owns it all?*

Verse 25 shows us that the Egyptians were so lacking in knowledge that they were *grateful* to be slaves and relieved of the burden of ownership of their ranches. It is important to note that the Bible presents accurate history and quite often does so without injecting commentary. The Apostle Paul said, “**If you are free, don’t seek to be bound.**” It should be obvious even in verse 25 that the Egyptians were trying to find grace in the eyes of a mere *man*. Since God (YHVH) is a jealous God, it is understandable why Egypt has never again been a first-rate world power.

Verse 26 states even *more* clearly that there were people in the land who were not taxed. Pharaoh taxed everyone except himself (of course) and the free people who owned their own land. The justification for the tax is easy to understand. In verse 23, we saw that Pharaoh gave them the seed for their crops. The tax was a **return** to the Pharaoh of *his own property*. Think for a moment about the phrase “**income tax return.**” *What are you returning that was given to you?* Your paycheck, of course. If you don’t already know why it belonged to the IMF in the first place, then keep reading and you will catch on in a few minutes.

These verses are an almost exact historical model of what took place in America from 1928 through 1935. During a contrived money shortage that had been engineered in Europe and set in motion with the 16<sup>th</sup> amendment and Federal Reserve Acts in 1913, Americans were robbed of their gold and silver and placed in a position where they could be coerced into looking to the government for their security. They were told that by taking a Social Security Number they would never have to fear dying in poverty. What they were *not* told, however, is that the Social Security Number is also your cosigner I. D. number for the national debt. It is your “Taxpayer Identification Number.”

Look up the legal meaning of the word “**instrument.**” Use a good Webster's Dictionary. An instrumentality is an agent that is created by instrument or someone that is obligated on or bound by an instrument. The Social Security Form SS-5 (application for a number) and the Social Security Card are examples of “legal instruments.” Also, look up “**United States**” in **28 USC § 3002(15)(C)**. This definition of “United States” means that if you have a SSN then *you are the United States!* When you become bound by the “instrument” called a Social Security Number (SSN) you become an “instrumentality” of Washington, DC’s corporate government and a “subject” of theirs [14<sup>th</sup> amendment]. In this book I often refer to the *SSN* as making you an “*instrumentality of the United States,*” but *ANY* instrument that attaches U.S. jurisdiction causes the same result. This includes *any* document that identifies you as a U.S. citizen. The definition of “taxpayer” is *the one who owes the tax*. The original taxpayer is the bankrupt government of Washington, DC and subsequent taxpayers are the instrumentalities of Washington, DC. The International Bankers have learned how to play us like *musical instruments*.

**Title 26 USC § 7809** says that any money received under Internal Revenue *LAW* is to be paid into the *U. S. TREASURY, daily*. It says *nothing, whatsoever*, about money collected under *contract*. Since all income tax is paid directly to the Federal Reserve Banks (not even a

---

government owned company, let alone the Treasury) this is corroborating evidence that **income tax is collected under contract, not law**. Look at several checks the IRS has returned to you. They will say, **“Pay to any FRB [Federal Reserve Bank] on US OBG [obligations].”**

When a Sovereign Citizen signs a Social Security Number Application (Form SS-5) they are exercising their freewill right to contract. They exchange their labor and the fruits of their labor for the dubious honor of sharing the yoke of bondage under the biggest mountain of debt this world has ever known. The international bankers have invented a system whereby a free people will willingly turn their backs on God’s blessings of liberty and gratefully welcome this “high-tech” form of slavery to pay off debts made by ungodly people for ungodly purposes. The delight I have seen on the faces of some senior citizens when they get their first Social Security check reminds me of **verse 25** of the historical example. From all the evidence I have seen there does not seem to be any purpose for the debt *other than to enslave us*. The debt has certainly not made the world a safer place to live, especially for unborn babies and young soldiers.

Luckily, there is a remedy. If you want to be free to enjoy **ALL** of the fruits of your labor and to do as you see fit on your own land, then you may use a **legal way** to break the contracts you signed. You must reject, renounce, revoke, repudiate, and rescind any benefits or potential benefits, for you or your dependents, which you may have accrued under those contracts. Just as a potential benefit causes a liability for premiums with an insurance company, the potential for liability under social security disability for you or your dependents has caused an obligation for you to pay your share of the tribute money.

Occasionally, a story will circulate about someone using Social Security Regulations to get all the money back that they have paid into social security, but I will not have any confidence in those stories until I see a Xerox of a check. Although you were defrauded into signing the SS-5, you were potentially eligible to receive a benefit; so (under **their** rules) you owed the premiums. I *did* demand a return of all money taken from me by their fraudulent promotion of the Social Security Ponzi Scheme, but I have not recovered a dime. Liberty is worth more than Social Security can give me, anyway. Due to conditions beyond my control, I cannot guarantee that the SSA will deliver your money.

After I became a Sovereign, some new information has come to light that may give future Sovereigns a financial boost as they leave the government’s jurisdiction. Since the Social Security Trust Fund *was* set up *as a Trust*, you have every right as a beneficiary to withdraw any funds deposited on your behalf when you disassociate yourself from the Trust. An additional step that may be made while giving up your obligations under Social Security is to demand the delivery of all funds deposited by yourself and on your behalf by various employers. If those funds are not delivered within thirty days, then you will have the right to presume that the Social Security Trust Fund is bankrupt and initiate compelled bankruptcy proceedings against the Social Security Trust Fund. If you are interested in sharing the cost and court *awards* of litigating the bankruptcy proceeding against the Social Security Trust Fund, keep in touch with the person and/or organization from whom you purchased your copy of **STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL** for further announcements and information. The legal procedure to initiate a compelled bankruptcy is better handled at a workshop on Sovereignty than in this literary work.

In order to regain your Sovereignty, you *must* stop turning to the government for benefits and turn to God for those benefits. Another way to put it might be to “find a way to live without giving up our liberty through enslaving contracts.” Currently, the most popular way to say it is, **“to restore the Citizen/Sovereign to his rightful place of control over the government/servant.”**

---

## Two kinds of status: State Citizen and U.S. citizen/subject

“The thirteenth amendment is a great extension of the powers of the national government.”  
United States v. Morris, 125 Federal Reporter 322,325

“The amendment [fourteenth] reversed and annulled the original policy of the constitution.”  
United States v. Rhodes, 27 Federal Cases 785, 794

“The rights of citizens of the state, as such, are not under consideration in the fourteenth amendment. They stand as they did before the adoption of the fourteenth amendment, and are fully guaranteed by other provisions.” United States v. Anthony, 24 Federal Cases 829, 830

“The rights of a citizen under one (state or United States citizenship) may be quite different from those which he has under the other...” Colgate v. Harvey, 296 US 404, 429

So we can see that the Supreme Court believes that there are two, radically different types of citizenship status that may be concurrent and distinctly separate in one physical location. The rights of one are subject to the whim of congress while the Rights of the other are recognized and guaranteed in the bill of rights. [Author]

In the 1945, Hooven and Allison Co. v. Evatt, the Supreme Court defined "United States", perhaps for the last time. The term "United States" may be used in any ONE of the several senses:

(1) It may be merely the name of a sovereign occupying the position analogous to that of other sovereigns in the family of nations. (2) It may designate the territory over which the sovereignty of the United States extends OR (3) It may be the collective names of the states which are united under the Constitution. The Court also defined the *two types of legislative powers* of Congress. Legislation in respect to the (2) definition and legislation in respect to (3) definition.

"In exercising its constitutional power to make all needful regulations respecting territory belonging to the United States, " (2) " *Congress is not subject to the same constitutional limitations as when legislating for the United States.*" (3)

## 4 — WHERE I'M COMING FROM

I previously indicated that I have gone through a lot to get where I am today. This might have caused one to wonder where I was then, where I am now, and what happened along the way. *Here is where I'm coming from.*

My *earthly* Citizenship is in Washington Republic. I was born on an island in Puget Sound in 1945. I was raised on a farm a long way from town where the only relief from work was school, church, or books. I read a lot. By the time I had finished high school, I had read the entire Encyclopedia Britannica, from A through Z, at least three times. It will not surprise anyone that I do not remember it all, but some of it did lodge in my gray matter as a background upon which to assess new information.

At fourteen years of age (too young to have **legal capacity** to sign a binding contract), I was told I must apply for a Social Security Number in order to work. Although the Social Security contract was legally insufficient, the creditors of the United States used that contract to mold my life to their service for most of the years following that event.

After a bit of college and some work in a factory, I enlisted in the U. S. Army in 1966. During the next three years I worked at approximately twenty different jobs. The most satisfying job I had in the Army was as a librarian on a post serving over 22,000 people. I can read very fast so my work performance didn't suffer even though I was reading ten to fifteen non-fiction books per week. It was a great opportunity to add specialized knowledge to the general background provided by the encyclopedias. I strongly identify with the robot in the movie "Short Circuit II." When the robot was flying around in "hang-glider mode," he called himself a "chrome breasted input-eater." I can't seem to get enough information (input), either. What has come with maturity, however, is the ability to discriminate between good information and poor information.

After leaving the Army, I worked for the U. S. Post Office. During the time I was sorting mail and selling stamps, the name of my employer changed to "U. S. Postal Service." I was told by the post master that the Post Office was now a privately owned company and it was going to be more efficient, reduce costs, and provide more services than the government. Since I was still paid by a government check, I asked the postmaster *exactly* who was the new owner of the Postal Service. He said, "It's most likely the Rockefellers or somebody like that." I have since been informed by reliable sources that the Postal Service along with the Forest Service, United States Marshall's Service, Immigration and Naturalization Service, National Park Service, and several other ex-government agencies have been transferred to the International Monetary Fund (IMF) for partial payment on the national debt. You didn't think they would continue to extend us credit *for nothing* did you?

In general, working for the government as a civilian was no more fulfilling than working for them as a soldier. After four years with the Post Office, I moved on to other employment. I worked as a carpenter, as a librarian, a hired gun, a salesman, and as a fisherman over the next ten years. I finally moved to Alaska and worked in the Merchant Marine starting as an unlicensed crewman and leaving as a Certified Staff Officer.

While living in Alaska, I was selected to serve as a juror on what was, up until that time, the longest and most expensive criminal trial in the state's history. A young fisherman from Washington State was accused of murdering eight people and burning a boat. After six months of observing modern court practice, I had very little confidence in the justice system.

Our case ended in a **hung jury** with nine to three in favor of acquittal on most counts. On retrial, the defendant was found *not guilty* on *all* counts. In between trials, the defense team finally found evidence that the prosecutors had been hiding during the first trial. The police and prosecuting attorneys had **conspired to hide and destroy exculpatory evidence**. The prosecutors *knew* the defendant **could not** be guilty because *they knew who had really committed the crimes!* The citizen accused of the crimes had spent nine months in solitary confinement and the state had spent over \$6,000,000.00 just to advance the careers of a few policemen and attorneys. Because I really do care about my fellow man, I was under a lot of stress during the trial. A large part of my daily diet in those days was Roloids! In mid 1997, the young man settled out of court for only a fraction of what the State of Alaska had spent to try to convict him. What a travesty!

Shortly after my jury experience, I began learning about the power of the IRS. They wanted me to file a "return" although more had been taken from my checks than their schedules said I owed. After a few telephone discussions with IRS agents, I went to a Certified Tax Preparer and had him prepare the back tax returns. The IRS then *ignored* my returns and *levied my wages anyway!* Was I ever HOT! I began studying tax avoidance literature and eventually bought the program offered by the Pilot Connection Society. More liens and levies. More expensive experience. The Pilot Connection people knew that the Social Security Number was not good for you, but since they did not know how to break the contract they downplayed its importance.

I spent the next three years studying the law and how to sue the IRS. I studied Admiralty Law and how to sue a ship owner who does not pay his crew. I discovered many things. I discovered that a "Notice of Levy" or a "Tax Lien" that does not arise out of a *valid* assessment is a forged security under **Title 18 USC § 513(a)**. I learned that the IRS has no way to do a *valid* assessment. I learned that the Attorney General and Secretary of the Treasury had to give up their citizenship and expatriate when they became members of INTERPOL. I discovered that the Secretary of the Treasury's REAL title is "U. S. Governor of (meaning, "*for*" or "*from*") the International Monetary Fund." I discovered that the Secretary of the Treasury is not allowed to be paid by the U. S. Government, therefore he is not a Federal employee. The Secretary of the Treasury is allowed to be paid *only* by the IMF, which makes him a Foreign Principle as defined in **Title 22 USC § 286(d)(1)**. I learned that any *agent* of the Secretary of the Treasury (IRS, BATF, INS, Secret Service, etc.) are "*agents of a foreign principle,*" as defined in **22 USC § 611**, and must *immediately* register as foreign agents or else be in felony violation of the Foreign Agents Registration Act. I learned that Income Tax is voluntary and there is no law that requires a natural human person to file a 1040 or to pay income tax.

I initiated lawsuits in Alaska Superior Court, Alaska Appeals Court, and U. S. District Court. My briefs and memorandums were well written (for an "In Propria Persona" litigant) but even with all of the evidence of fraud that I had, *I lost*. I could not possibly hope to win when I lacked **legal capacity** to sue. The SS-5 form I had signed at fourteen years of age had granted the government a type of **Power Of Appointment** that put me under a **legal disability**. I had no more capacity to sue *anyone* over a tax issue than an infant has to sue its mother over the kind of baby food he or she is fed.

The fight over taxes that followed cost about \$80,000 of this working man's wages. Because my employer was a willing assistant of the IRS, it was abundantly obvious, *even to me*, that I would be working for half-pay if I stayed with the company, so I quit. My wife and I had

determined *never again* to participate willingly in *any* IRS scheme. Being still bound by our Social Security contracts, we were *very* disobedient slaves!

A friend told us about a lecture on the subject of taxes and something called "**Sovereignty**" that was being held about three hundred miles away from where we were then living. Because I had already spent so much money for other information on taxes, I figured that it could not hurt to at least see what they had to say. My best information has come from some of the most unexpected places. The people putting on the lecture had done all of the things that we had done *and then some*. The "*then some*" included *finding answers!* At last I could understand not only **what** had happened to me, but **how** and **why**. I learned that I had *given* the IRS and Social Security *my written permission* to lien and levy my wages without having to go to court. They had *my written permission* to take taxes out of my paycheck. They had *my written permission* to hold up a real estate sale until they had as much money as they wanted out of the sale price. I was being destroyed for lack of knowledge. I had known, of course, that I had signed a bunch of contracts that were adversely effecting my life but I lacked knowledge about how to *effectively* remove the legal disabilities by revoking the Powers of Appointment.

Using the philosophy of the **Church of the Body of Christ** and **Anderson's Ark**, coupled with the paperwork techniques that I learned from the Pilot Connection Society and from Doc Scott, I filed the necessary affidavits and notices to cancel all unconscionable contracts with government and quasi-government agencies. **I became free of legal disability (sui juris)**. The helpful things that I have learned are being passed along to you in this book.

After our affidavits were recorded and notifications delivered to the appropriate agencies, my wife, my son, and I have received only one letter apiece from Social Security. The SSA informed us that we could *reconsider* the revocation of their SSN, if we wished, by requesting that the number remain valid. We ignored the letters. There is no such thing as "implied consent" in American law. In addition to SSA's offer to reconsider, I received one *form letter* from the IRS asking why I had not filed a form 1040. As with all of their *form letters*, this one had *their* old SSN in the upper right-hand corner. I sent the letter back to them with copies of what I had sent to Social Security and told the IRS that since it was now illegal for *me* to use the SSN it was also illegal for *them* to use it. They were told never to use that number to identify me again. That is the last time they have written to me.

After becoming a Sovereign, I have opened two bank accounts (saving & checking) for a foreign Trust without signing any contracts or giving a SSN. I have bought and sold tens of thousands of dollars in gold and silver coins without giving a SSN. I have purchased automobiles and sold real estate without giving a SSN. I continue to earn money and spend it (*with my wife's expert assistance*) and the IRS could not care less. Because I no longer have a Social Security Number, I am not an instrumentality of the United States. I am not a "taxpayer." I am not a cosigner on the national debt. My "fair share" of the tax burden is exactly **ZERO!** All it costs someone to enjoy this liberty is to give up the government "benefits."

Because the public thoroughfares (highways) are built and maintained by taxes collected at the fuel pump, I *do* pay my fair share of upkeep in exact proportion to the amount of use. I willingly pay these and all other Constitutionally authorized taxes (excises, imposts, & duties). User fees are authorized by the Constitution. I keep the fuel receipts in the autos so I may prove to an officer that I have paid my share of the cost of my right to use the public thoroughfare.

**I do not advocate resisting or evading any legitimate tax.** If you owe a tax, then pay the tax. Protesting the tax or failing to file or pay the tax does absolutely no good. The IRS keeps a file on each taxpayer called the "**Individual Master File.**" In this computerized master

file, they have certain Transaction Codes. If the IRS ever officially classifies you as a tax protester they will attach a Transaction Code which causes "TC 148 HOLD IS P" to appear in the upper right hand corner of each page of the Individual Master File. The last Individual Master Files that I saw did not identify me as a tax protester. What I have done is *completely* legal and has given me back the liberty that *I had given away*.

## The SSS

In 1969, the IRS established what they called the SSS, which stands for "Special Services Section." Tom Huston wrote a Memorandum from the White House to H. R. Haldeman, dated September 21, 1970, in which he indicated the purpose for creating the SSS.

*"What we cannot do in a courtroom via criminal prosecutions to curtail the activities of some of these groups, IRS could do by administrative action. Moreover, valuable intelligence-type information could be turned up by IRS as a result of their field audits."*

**Author's note:** It is *obvious* that Tom Huston knows that the Constitution requires warrants to obtain the kind of information that he is discussing. *You still do not believe there is a conspiracy?*

## DEFINITION

**Due Process Clause.** Two such clauses are found in the U.S. Constitution, one in the 5<sup>th</sup> Amendment pertaining to the federal government, and the other in the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment which protects persons from state actions. There are two aspects: *procedural*, in which a person is guaranteed fair procedures and *substantive* which protects a person's property from unfair governmental interference or taking. Similar clauses are in most state constitutions. See **Due process of law**. - Black's Law Dictionary, Fifth Edition,

**Author's Note:** I wonder what Tom Huston thinks of "Due Process"? It appears that he thinks it is an unnecessary restriction upon the feudal powers of the Bankers.

## What does it all mean?

### Sovereign (noun)

"A person, body, or state in which independent and supreme authority is vested; a chief ruler with supreme power; a king or other ruler with limited power" [Black's Law Dictionary]. The decision in *Chisolm v Georgia* declared that the People are the Sovereigns. Does the government treat you with the respect due to a Sovereign? If they don't, maybe it is because you are not a Sovereign.

### Sovereignty (noun)

- 1- Supremacy of authority or rule
- 2- Royal Rank, Authority, or Power
- 3- Complete Independence and Self Government

As used in *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL*, the term "Sovereign" describes the Citizen that recognizes God as his only King and that God's law is supreme. As much as lies within the Sovereign, he lives peaceably with all men and he recognizes man's laws only when not in conflict with God's law.

## 5 — REAL SOVEREIGNS DON'T PAY TRIBUTE

Matthew 17:24-27, Matthew 22:15-22

As mentioned in Chapter Three, there is reason to believe the Egyptian farmers paid no tribute to Pharaoh prior to the famine. In **Matthew 17:25** a disciple entered into a verbal contract with a tax collector that his Master (and, by presumption, Peter) was obligated to pay a tax. I will paraphrase Jesus' response with modern American instead of 1611 King James English:

Jesus said, "*What could you have been thinking about, Simon? Of whom do earthly governments charge taxes, their own Citizens or of foreigners?*" (Our word "stranger" comes from the same root as the Spanish word "extranjero," which means "foreigner.")

Peter answered, "*Of foreigners.*"

Jesus clinched this in Peter's mind by pointing out, "*Then the Citizens are free* (of taxation and regulation)."

Jesus then found a solution to their immediate predicament (paying the tax). He told Peter to go catch a fish and use the piece of money he would find in the fish's mouth to pay the tax for Jesus and for Peter, *but not pay taxes for the other eleven disciples.*

From these verses, we learn what the Rabbi Jesus taught about taxes:

1. **Non-franchised Citizens do not pay tribute.**
2. **If you agree that you owe tribute (written or verbal contract) then you must pay it.**
3. **If God provides the money through some miraculous means to pay tribute, then pay it. Otherwise, do not pay it; and**
4. **From the example of the other eleven disciples, we see that there is no religiously imposed duty to pay tribute that is not owed.**

In those days, a Citizen was free to work his land, work at his trade, or deal in goods free of his own government's interference. However, if a foreigner were to ask permission (apply for a license) to enter the country, cross the country's territory, or do business in the country then they had to pay for the privilege in the form of excises, imposts, duties, and licenses. So, we have a very good reason to believe the pre-famine Egyptian Citizen [see chapter three] was free in all senses of the word, including free of taxation. We also see that the government's **only** legitimate usage of their authority to tax is for the protection of the freedom of the Free Citizens. How else could Jesus have truthfully made the blanket statement regarding "kings of the earth" in verse twenty-five?

If you question the Author's conclusions on the meaning of the above-selected verses from Matthew 17, then ask yourself the following questions:

1. **Why did Jesus use the particular words "*not to offend*"? (Consult *Strong's*)**
2. **Why did Jesus use a miracle to *pay* a tax if "*the children are free*" means that the government cannot tax us under *any* conditions, *including* unconscionable contract?**
3. **Why did Jesus *NOT* pay the tax for the other eleven disciples?**
4. **What did Peter do differently than the other eleven disciples? (Opened his big mouth.)**

Business in America was conducted in much the same manner as it was in Israel until the **Banking Relief Act of March 9, 1933** amended the **Trading with the Enemies Act of 1917**, allowing the U. S. Government to treat American Citizens as if they were the enemy. The old Trading with the Enemy Act had allowed the government to seize bank accounts and assets of foreigners but carefully stipulated that this did **not** allow seizure of an *American's* assets. The

first effect of the Banking Relief Act was to *amend out* the protection for Americans. *By act of Congress, war was declared upon the American People on March 9, 1933.*

In FDR's inaugural address, he told the nation that he was going to ask congress for the power to deal with the depression *as if it were a war*. He gained that power in the **Banking Relief Act** and the **War Powers Act**. The Constitution provides that during time of war or national emergency there can be Martial Law Courts. The Constitution provides that during war or national emergency *the right to Habeas Corpus may be suspended*. The United States has been in a constant state of war or national emergency since 1933. First was the war on the depression, then WW2, then Korea, then Lebanon, then the Suez Canal, then Civil Rights, then Haiti, then Viet Nam, then war on poverty, war on drugs, then Lebanon again, then the war on crime, then Somalia, then Bosnia, then Lebanon, then Haiti again, etc. Are you getting the picture? Every president since FDR has had some type of war to justify the continued martial law and denial of common law protection of Citizens. More on this, later.

In **Matthew 22:15-22**, Jesus had another encounter where the subject of *paying tribute* was raised. This time, a group of people representing the religious "status quo" was seeking to trick Jesus into saying something whereby they could accuse Him to the Roman government. Jesus called them some pretty hard names because He could see that their hearts were bad. Jesus asked them who's picture was on the coin and they answered, "*Caesar's.*" Jesus said, "*Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things which are God's.*" He was saying essentially the same thing He had told Peter. If you have *contracted* to pay tribute, then *pay the tribute*. Once you have contracted to pay tribute (have a Social Security Card) then *the money is no longer yours*. It is Caesar's. Give him what ever he wants, because *it is his*. If you have NOT signed any contracts, the money is YOURS and you follow the example of the other eleven disciples in Matthew, Chapter 17. *Even the most brain-dead pulpit-puppet cannot twist this passage to mean that we have to give the government anything the government does not already own.*

In **Article 1, § 9**, the U. S. Constitution allows the government to raise money through excises, imposts, and duties. No capitation or other direct tax may be place on Citizens of the several states except under conditions that the government does not even pretend to exist. Is this true? In order to understand the next couple of paragraphs, you need to put forth the effort to read your constitution and the relevant portions of the Internal Revenue Code.

Because an income tax is a capitation or direct tax, then how do they get around this Constitutional restriction? Easy! The restriction only applies to Citizens of the several States. Since you signed your application for a Social Security Card (as well as countless other documents) saying you are a U. S. citizen (capital U, small c), they have ample room for *presumption* that you are under their jurisdiction. The IRS is an "alter ego" for "Common Law Trust #62" which is registered in Puerto Rico, and is therefore *inside* the jurisdiction of Washington, DC. The actual, physical headquarters building of the IRS is in the Virgin Islands and all of *your* income taxes are made to appear as if you were working *there* and your taxes were being collected in the Virgin Islands! Your IRS Individual Master File Transaction Codes will verify this. The official records of births, deaths, marriages, and divorces will show that most American Taxpayers have never set foot in the U. S. Virgin Islands. The passenger manifests for the airlines and shipping lines will support the vital statistics records. This means that the Transaction Codes for the IRS are a deliberate fraud.

When you look up the definition of "United States" in **26 IRC (USC) § 7701** you will find that the only "states" included are pieces of real estate usually referred to as "territories."

They call the Virgin Islands “a State.” They are presumed to intend the results of their deliberate acts. By using the word “**include**” in the definition, they are legally **excluding** all things not **included** in the list. “Include” does *not* mean “including, but not limited to.” IRS Code Section 7701 begins by saying that these definitions apply unless they are “otherwise expressed” in the code. Since the term “United States” is “otherwise expressed” to *mean* (not “include”) all fifty states in Section 4612(a)(4)(A), then the “United States” as defined in Section 7701 could not possibly mean all fifty states! The definition given in § 7701 is the general definition for the entire code. The definition in § 4612(a)(4)(A) is for *that section only*. Here is your iron-clad proof of deliberate, premeditated fraud, *and your way out!*

### TIME IS MONEY

We all know that matter can be neither created nor destroyed by man through ordinary means. When a house burns down, there are twisted pieces of steel, burnt nails, and lots of carbonized and vaporized elements that went up in flame and smoke. When those elements eventually descend as rain, they grow into more trees and turnips. The trees become more houses. The matter merely changes form, it is not destroyed.

Energy is like that, as well. The Bonneville Dam blocks the Columbia River and uses the energy extracted from the flow of water to produce electricity. The electricity goes to the homes in Portland and is used for lights. The lights heat the air. The heat causes the air in the room to hold more moisture. The moisture in the air then returns to the Bitter Root Mountains in Idaho and falls as snow. The next year, the snow melts and generates more electricity at Bonneville Dam. The energy merely changes form, it is not destroyed.

During their lifetimes, mankind uses all sorts of matter and energy, and we leave it all here when we die. The bible tells us that even our bodies return to the earth. Is there anything that once it is gone, can never return in any form? Is there anything in or on this earth that we may call our very own? Did God give mankind *anything* that is his, and his alone, to do with as he wills, that does not stay here on earth when we leave? *Yes*. It is called our *time*. God gave us our length of days on earth. God gave us our labor, as a gift. Our time is our property, given to us by God.

We all know the phrase “*Time is money*.” When we work, we are *selling* our *time*. We are *always* paid by the hour. When we hire a consultant, we are not paying him for the *time* he spends with us; we are paying him for his *time* in previous study of similar situations. The more *time* he has spent in study, the more *time* he can save us. The more *time* he can save us, the more that the *time* of the consultant is worth. The consultant is paid for his *time*, even if he is paid at a different rate.

When a banker “creates” money out of thin air and loans that imaginary money to you, at interest, it is the same as if the banker were writing you a bad check and then expecting *you* to cover that check by using your *time* (labor). You must invest *your time and labor* into paying the banker that principle and interest. What the banker is doing is stealing your *time* with a bad check. The only thing on earth that you have that is really yours is your time, and the banker is taking your time and paying for it with a bad check. This is called stealing, and one of the ten commandments is, “Thou shalt not steal.” In a later chapter, we will deal with how to force a bank to return a zero-balance on these “bad-check” loans and show you how to crash credit cards. The reason for showing you how to do these things is given in this chapter. You are reclaiming *your time* that was *stolen* from you by the banker.

The Children of Israel spoiled the Egyptians on the night before they left Egypt. They were told by God to do this, because that was the last opportunity and the only method whereby the children of Israel would be able to recover payment for their labor. They had been robbed of their time and labor by the Egyptians and now it was payback time. The debt had come due, and the Children of Israel collected the debt. When a soon-to-be Sovereign crashes a credit card or forces a zero-balance on a loan at a bank, the Sovereign is being paid for all of the time that had been stolen from them through the years. How much does the bank owe you? It depends upon how many times they have written bad check loans to you and how much interest they have charged. You should figure out an approximate value and begin planning how to reclaim (redeem) your time.

When a government claims the power of direct taxation of a Citizens' *time*, they are claiming that they have ownership of a certain percentage of that time. By claiming the right to take even *part* of our time, they are claiming *ownership* of *all* of our time. (*Only the owner of the pie has the right to divide the pie.*) The only taxes that governments may legitimately claim are those *indirect* taxes that protect *our* ownership of *our* time. Did they give us the time here on earth or did we receive it from God?

In Matthew chapter seventeen, Jesus describes the legitimate taxing power of governments as being restricted to taxing foreigners (strangers) for protection of the *free children of the kingdom*. When Pharaoh taxed the Egyptians, it was because the Pharaoh *owned* the *Egyptians*, the *land*, and the *seed*. The government can only claim ownership of *our* time by claiming ownership of *our* bodies, souls, and spirits. By what right [quo warranto] does the United States government claim that they have ownership of our time? We may thank God that there is a remedy and that we may free ourselves from state bondage so that we may again worship God as free men and women.

Taxpayers spend eight months out of each year earning enough money to pay their direct, indirect, and hidden taxes. Taxpayers *owe* these taxes because they have gone to the government for benefits, and in exchange for those benefits, have signed contracts that must be fulfilled. *Are or can these taxpayers be obedient Christians?* Let us examine this very closely, but not judgmentally. I understand that many persons who profess to be Christian are sincere, but the question was "*are they obedient?*" God directs us to make no covenant with the enemy [Exodus 23:32]. God directs us to bring the *first* fruits of our increase to Him as an offering [Exodus 34:26]. Virtually all State Licensed Churches tell us that we must pay taxes in order to be obedient to God. When we have contracted (for government benefits) and give the *first sixty-five percent* of our increase to the government, how is this evidence that we are obeying God? This was included for "Christian" taxpayers and I will hasten to add that God deals with people in the real world. We are not all in the same grade, metaphorically speaking. If reading this book doesn't bring about a change in your behavior, it can't help you.

The *REAL* Sovereigns did not pay tribute in ancient Egypt, they did not pay tribute in Jerusalem in the days of Jesus, the Christ, and they do not pay tribute in the united States, either. The Children *are* free!

**Black's Law Dictionary, Fifth Edition  
West Publishing Company (1979) page 1417**

**Waive, v.** To abandon, throw away, renounce, repudiate, or surrender a claim, a privilege, a right, or the opportunity to take advantage of some defect, irregularity, or wrong. To give up right or claim voluntarily.

A person is said to waive a benefit when he renounces or disclaims it, and he is said to waive a tort or injury when he abandons the remedy which the law gives him for it.

In order for one to "waive" a right, he must do it knowingly and be possessed of the facts. **Barnhill v. Rubin, D.C.Tex., 46 F.Supp. 963, 966**

**Waiver,** The intentional or voluntary relinquishment of a known right, or such conduct as warrants an inference of the relinquishment of such right, or when one dispenses with the performance of something he is entitled to exact or when one in possession of any right, whether conferred by law or by contract, with full knowledge of the material facts, does or forbears to do something the doing of which or the failure of forbearance to do which is inconsistent with the right, or his intention to rely upon it. The renunciation, repudiation, abandonment, or surrender of some claim, right, privilege, or the opportunity to take advantage of some defect, irregularity, or wrong. A doctrine resting upon an equitable principle, which courts of law will recognize. **Atlas Life Ins. Co. v. Schrimsher, 179 Okl. 642, 66 P.2d 944,948**

**Did you really sign a contract?**

Many so-called contracts with the government are actually "consent forms" or "waiver of rights" forms. These consents or waivers are binding. It is easy to convert a *contract cancellation* form into a withdrawal of consent form by merely *adding* the words, "***I hereby withdraw any and all consent for your agency's acting in my stead or on my behalf and I hereby withdraw any waivers of rights that I may have knowingly or unknowingly signed that granted your agency authority and/or jurisdiction over my person, my rights, or my property.***" Because it is so hard for *us* to tell a contract from a consent form, you know it is well nigh *impossible* for a bureaucrat! It is safest to treat them all like contracts. – Author

**Black's Law Dictionary, Fifth Edition  
West Publishing Company (1979) page 276, 277**

**Consent.** A concurrence of wills. Voluntarily yielding the will to the proposition of another; acquiescence or compliance therewith. Agreement; the act or result of coming into harmony or accord. Consent is an act of reason, accompanied with deliberation, the mind weighing as in a balance the good or evil on each side. It means voluntary agreement by a person in the possession and exercise of sufficient mental capacity to make an intelligent choice to do something proposed by another. It supposes a physical power to act, a moral power of acting, and a serious, determined, and free use of these powers. Consent is implied in every agreement. It is an act unclouded by fraud, duress, or sometimes even mistake.

Willingness in fact that an act or an invasion of an interest shall take place. Restatement, Second, Torts, § 10A.

As used in the law of rape “consent” means consent of the will, and submission under the influence of fear or terror cannot amount to real consent. There must be an exercise of intelligence based on knowledge of its significance and moral quality and there must be a choice between resistance and assent. And if woman resists to the point where further resistance would be useless or until her resistance is overcome by force or violence, submission thereafter is not “consent”.

See also **Acquiescence; Age of consent; Assent; Connivance; Informed consent.**  
(listed under “consent”)

**Express consent.** That directly given, either viva voce or in writing. It is positive, direct, unequivocal consent, requiring no inference or implication to supply its meaning. **Pacific Nat. Agricultural Credit Corporation v. Hagerman**, 40 N.M. 116, 55 P.2d 667,670

**Implied consent.** That manifested by signs, actions, or facts, or by inaction or silence, which raise a presumption that the consent has been given. For example, when a corporation does business in a state it impliedly consents to be subject to the jurisdiction of that state’s courts in the event of tortious conduct, even though it is not incorporated in that state.

Most every state has a statute implying the consent of one who **DRIVES** upon its highways to submit to some type of scientific test or tests measuring the alcoholic content of the **DRIVER’S** blood. In addition to implying consent, these statutes usually provide that if the result of the test shows that the alcohol content exceeds a specified percentage, then a rebuttable presumption of intoxication arises. [*emphasis added*]

*Author’s Notes:* A **driver** is one who is using the public thoroughfares as a place of business. A **driver** is engaged in commerce. A **driver** must be licensed. Of course the government has the right to test the blood alcohol level of a **driver!** But they have *no such right* to delay any other Citizen and/or deprive him of his secured right to travel unless they are prepared to charge him with a crime and swear out a warrant from first hand knowledge of the facts.

In regard to the paragraph on the **law of rape**; - I had at one time considered renaming this book, **Rape of the Sovereigns**. *Submission* of the body in the face of overpowering military might is *not consent*.

---

### How to start a war.

Naturally the common people don’t want war ... but after all it is the leaders of a country who determine the policy, and it is always a simple matter to drag the people along, whether it is a democracy, or a fascist dictatorship, or a parliament, or a communist dictatorship. Voice or no voice, the people can always be brought to the bidding of the leaders. That is easy. All you have to do is to tell them they are being attacked, and denounce the pacifists for lack of patriotism and exposing the country to danger. It works the same in every country.

- Hermann Göring

## 6 — THE BLESSINGS OF LIBERTY

Exodus 6:6-7, Exodus 20:1-17, Leviticus 18:3-5, Deuteronomy 20:4, Psalms 91,  
Matthew 28:20, John Chapter 17

Most of the signers of the Declaration of Independence died very painful deaths. Most of the signers who managed to live through the War of Independence died in poverty. We know they recognized this possibility because they said as much in their closing statements in the Declaration of Independence. Reading about the conditions imposed by the unelected government of England that preceded the battles at Lexington and Concord gives one a better understanding and appreciation for the liberty we may now enjoy. In the Preamble to the Constitution, they said that they had done all of their work, “... *to secure the Blessings of Liberty to ourselves and our Posterity...*” They made this statement as Sovereigns. *We* are not able to enjoy those blessings until we *reclaim* our lost Sovereignty.

Because our forefathers founded the nation based upon the rights of Sovereigns brought about by their understanding of the Bible, this Chapter goes rather heavily into the Bible from the standpoint of a person of Christian orientation. In condensing this information, I am attempting to bring to a modern American in one chapter, what *twenty years of devoted research* brought to the authors of the Declaration of Independence. The founders of our country were familiar with all of the political systems on the Earth that had ever been recorded. Since the Bible is one of the oldest books and covers the longest time period, they spent many *years* in Bible study. No one that I know has an understanding of the Bible that is nearly as good as most of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. At least none of *my* religion and Bible professors understood it as well. In *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL*, you will find only *a few* of the more interesting and relevant portions of the Bible. I hope you will become interested and continue your study.

God gives us the power to regain our Sovereignty. He gave us our Sovereignty in the first place, so naturally He would be pleased if we finally placed some value on it. When we leave *any* system, we go immediately into another system. If we seek protection in any *other* man-made system, even one of our own making, we are going to go through the same problems all over again. We can only be *truly* free by entering God's system *immediately* upon leaving man's systems.

Looking in the Bible for the best word to describe what we must do, we find the word “**repent**.” (Look up the word that was translated “repent” in *Strong's*.) “Repent” does *not* mean “confession.” It does *not* mean to be sorry. It does not mean to be contrite. Repent is an *action word* that means to *reverse our direction of travel* or *reverse our actions*. We must *repent* of following man's government if we are to become a Sovereign *over* that government. We must quit *following* if we are to *lead*. We cannot follow and lead at the same time. ***The act of reversing the roles of leader and follower is an act of repentance.*** When we inform a public official that he is in violation of his oath of office and demand that he live up to his oath, we are issuing the public official a *call to repentance*. Unfortunately, some people find it difficult to admit that they are wrong. Repentance requires you to admit that you have been doing things *incorrectly*, but it is the **only remedy** that allows you to begin using the *correct* procedures.

To only make a *partial* break with man's government is to enter the status of “**disobedient slave**.” Virtually all of the trials and tribulations (IRS liens and levies, foreclosures, traffic tickets, civil forfeitures, harassment, etc.) come to the disobedient slave. Disobedient slaves are trying to withdraw from the system without knowing that they **MUST**

seek God's protection and without knowing how to make a clean break. Once a person understands how to make a *strategic* withdrawal, the change of jurisdictions can be painless.

**Ben Franklin** said, "*Experience keeps a dear [expensive] school, but the fool will learn in no other.*" It has taken a series of expensive *experiences* for the author to reach his present status. Please show me how much smarter you are than I am by not copying my *mistakes*.

**Donald Laird** said, "*Man is creature of habit, resorting to logic only when forced to by dire necessity.*" It is My sincere desire that the readers of *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL* are not so comfortable in their habitual seeking of benefits from the government that they won't seriously consider the information presented herein.

The method of regaining one's Sovereignty as presented in this book has been thoroughly tested during the past fifteen years and has been found to be rock solid. If, by the time you have thoroughly studied this entire book, you are not convinced that you can regain your own Sovereignty by using these procedures, then there are only two options open:

**Option 1:** Continue with your life as a United States citizen / government subject and try to fit back in quietly. Continue giving two-thirds of your time and money to fund government programs either directly or indirectly. Don't complain, because it is your conscious choice; *or*

**Option 2:** Learn how to solve some of your particular problems by talking with a knowledgeable person who has already used this method of regaining Sovereignty. Then begin to enjoy the true freedom and liberty that God had planned *for you*.

**Revelations 18:11** makes it clear that the entire earthly system is going to collapse at some point because the wonderful things provided by the system are just *too costly*. I have already decided that the supposed "benefits" provided by the government are too costly for me. I can no longer afford to continue contracting away my *time* and Liberty in exchange for a few, government revocable privileges. It kinda reminds me of enriched white bread. The bread makers process *out* about 22 nutrients and then "enrich" it by putting about 8 of the cheaper nutrients *back in*. Like the enriched bread, exchanging my God given Liberty for government granted privileges seems to be just as lousy of a deal.

While you have your Bible open to **Revelations 18**, take a look at **verse 13**. Keep in mind that the State you were born in *sold* your birth certificate to the U. S. Dept. of Commerce. The governments are not buying and selling wood pulp, folks. They are making merchandise of the souls of men. The curses of this chapter are on the heads of those men.

God will fight our battles for us. Psalms 91 shows us what God is willing to do for His obedient servants. An entire company of American soldiers in Europe read this Psalm every morning and that company had the lowest casualty rate of any unit in the war. The rest of the companies in the campaign were decimated, or *worse*. ("Decimated" comes from the same Latin root as "decimal" and means that one out of ten men were lost.)

**Psalms 91 is the ultimate insurance policy.** One of my teachers told the story of a farmer-lady friend of his in the Midwest who had never insured her wheat crop against weather damage. She believed that she never had any weather damage was because she always trusted God to look after her needs. One year she was talked into buying crop insurance and, sure enough, the hail came along and destroyed her crop. Her children praised her foresight in getting the insurance and said, "*Just imagine where you'd be if you weren't insured!*" However, this lady had trusted God for too many years to forget what He had done for her in the past. Her reply was, "*My crop most likely wouldn't have been damaged in the first place.*" When she trusted God, God protected her. When she trusted the insurance company, it was as if God had said, "*I guess you don't want my protection any more*" and then He let the hail beat her crop into

the ground. The lady has never again looked to anyone but God for protection and has never again suffered crop damage.

The Bible is full of examples of God's protection and intervention. He goes before us and fights our battles for us. The only two reasons that we even need to be present at the battles are to be a witness to His mighty power and to increase our faith in Him.

**Exodus Chapter 20 contains the Ten Commandments.** In verse 5, God says He is a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate Him. The very first thing we must do when seeking God's protection is to learn and obey His laws, starting with the Ten Commandments. The First Commandment is, "*Thou shalt have no other gods before me.*" This means, among other things, we are to go to no one else for benefits **before** we go to God. It means we keep God in the #1 position in our lives at all times. We are not to allow any organization, thing, or person to either take His place or come between us.

"**Before,**" in the first Commandment, means the same as it does in Genesis 10:9 where the Bible says of Nimrod, "*He was a mighty hunter **before the LORD:** wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter **before the LORD.***" Nimrod was one of the bad guys. Nimrod was the first earthly king that even *pretended* to have the authority to create laws. By creating laws, Nimrod was setting himself up as an equal to God, *before* God, between God and the People.

God is our Father, and like an earthly parent, He is pleased when His children look to Him for benefits. Like an earthly father, He is pleased by obedience and displeased by disobedience.

We are to *fear* God and keep *His* commandments. If we are more afraid of the IRS, BATF, or FBI than we are of God, then we are displeasing God. To assist in understanding what the word "fear" means in the Bible, read **Psalms 2:11, 19:9, and 111:10, and Isaiah 8:11-12.**

God wants ALL of our devotion, love, fear, obedience, and gratitude. But then, so does the earthly government, doesn't it? Man's government is as jealous of our worship as God is. This is why there will *always* be conflict between God's "Called Out Ones" and man's government, with us caught in the muddle trying to decide from what little information we have and from our limited experience which is the right way to go. That is why we need the Bible.

God wants to be thanked with the *first fruits* of our increase [**Exodus 34:26**]. When we contract with Social Security for our benefits, we discover (upon receipt of our paychecks) that the *first* fruits have already been stripped out and given to the "small g" god called government. We find it is *impossible* to obey the commandment to give Him the first fruits of our increase because *we* have already authorized, *over our own signature*, that the first fruits be given to another god. That god came **before** God.

I really like the Lord's prayer. I don't mean the one that goes, "*Our father, who art in Heaven ...*" That is *our* prayer. The *Lord's* prayer is the 17th Chapter of John. Whenever I find myself wondering where I am going or what I have to do next to the point where I am becoming discouraged, I read the **91<sup>st</sup> Psalm** and **John 17**. **John 17:11** says we are *in* the world and **John 17:14** says we are *not of* the world. **Verse 20** encourages me the *most*.

There seems to be a lot of misinformation about how much allegiance a Sovereign owes to his (as in, *his possession*, not *his master*) country. **John F. Kennedy** said, "*Ask not what your country can do for you. Ask what you can do for your country.*" I disagreed with Kennedy on many *other* things, too. But I agreed with Kennedy on his determination to do away with the CIA, FBI, and Federal Reserve.

In **Leviticus 18:3-5** we see just how much an obedient servant of God must submit to the laws of a nation.

**18:3** (paraphrased) **You are not to do the things that were done in the country you came from and you aren't to do the things they do where you are going. Specifically, you are not subject to their laws.**

**18:4** (paraphrased) **You will do (perform) My judgments (orders) and keep My laws (commandments). I am YHVH.**

**18:5** (paraphrased) **You will obey My laws and judgments, and when you do, you will have a real life, the life I created you to enjoy, inside my laws. I AM.**

If most of your religious education has come to you via the mass media ministers or from tax *exempt* (incorporated) not tax *immune* (free) churches, then you have probably been puzzled for years over why Earthly governments have consistently and violently tried to stamp out Biblical teachings and Bible study. You were most likely taught that sincere followers of your faith always pray for those in authority over them, always obey the civil authority, and *always pay their taxes*. Some churches even teach that you are not accountable to God for acts done under orders from Civil Authority. **Leviticus 18:3-5** sure puts the torch to that house of straw, doesn't it? For more enlightenment on the subject of which government has authority over us, read the book *Christian Patriotism*, copyrighted in 1900 by Alonzo Trevor Jones. (Available post paid from GAMALIEL for a \$7.50+ donation.)

If you are a Christian and your church taught that we are now under the "law of grace" and the old law is no longer in effect, then look at what Jesus said on the subject in **Matthew 28:20**. If you believe that Jesus *is* God [**John 1:1-3**], then is it not *essential Christian Doctrine* that Jesus was referring to the Ten Commandments as well as *all* of the social law? Think about it. If you are *not* of the Christian persuasion or if you are having a difficult time following this discussion, please keep in mind that I am attempting to convey the state of mind of the founders of the country and composers of the Declaration of Independence, who drew heavily on the Bible when they formed our Declaration of Independence.

Jesus said the sheep know the voice of their shepherd (**John 10:4**). A sheep cannot listen to and obey the voice of two shepherds, can it? A person cannot serve both God and a civil government at the same time, unless the civil government is in obedience to God, and then only coincidentally (**Matthew 6:24**). I use the word "coincidentally" here to mean *exactly that*. You cannot be blessed by God if you are seeking those blessings in a disobedient manner; i.e., by serving a strange god (government).

The greatest difference between Christianity and Judaism (**Torah**, not **Talmud**) seems to be that Christians believe that God the Father and Jesus are one God (**Elohim** is plural and can be translated "Godhead"), like two facets on one diamond. Christians say that God is also called by *many* other names and titles in the Old Testament. Classical Jewish scholars maintain that Christianity teaches *polytheism* (multiple gods) because they believe that Jesus was a separate person from God and not the *Messiah*. On the other hand, modern adherents to the Jewish religion believe what the Talmud says about Jesus, which is that he was the illegitimate son of a prostitute named "Miriam the Hairdresser." I hope my own beliefs and biases, and my references to the New Testament and Christian theology, do not interfere with *anyone* achieving Sovereignty, be they Jewish, Islam, or even Hindu.

Our unique Sovereign/servant relationship to the U. S. Government, via the Declaration of Independence and the contract known as the Constitution for the united States, places the People as the Sovereigns over the government. It *does not* make us servants of a false god. How can I say this with such confidence? Because the supreme Court said so in the decision rendered in the case of Chisholm v. Georgia. Just after the Revolutionary War the State of Georgia was trying to weasel out of a debt by saying that Georgia was a Sovereign State and could decide whether or not it would pay a debt and, as a Sovereign State, Georgia was *immune to suit* from a mere human. The supreme Court said that the only reason for the State of Georgia to exist was to serve the people and, further, that the people were the *Sovereigns over the state*. I am not making this up. You can read it for yourself if you will look up Chisholm v. Georgia in the law library. Human nature has not changed. The Declaration of Independence has not changed. It is only through our power of contract that our relationship with the government has been reversed.

The successful and final push for overthrow of America can be traced to a document that originated in the Bank of England, written by **Clement Roosevelt**. This bank document laid out a plan whereby the banks could control the world. Whereas Medici's plan in the Middle Ages contained only four parts, the Bank of England plan had ten parts. The first nine parts describe how the property and liberty will be taken away from the people by the government and given to the *Central Bank*, as they call themselves in the *fifth* part this document. The bankers realized they could not succeed as long as the people remembered how free Sovereigns lived and governed themselves, so the tenth part of the plan, *government control of education*, would have to be established at least a generation before any of the other parts could begin to be implemented. In America, the tenth part of the plan was put into effect in the 1890's with "free" public education under Dewey's progressive education system. The Central Bank was established in 1913 by the Federal Reserve Act. The plan has progressed until today all ten parts of the plan are being faithfully followed in America, *and we think it is the American way!* Since the Bankers knew that the plan would be rejected outright if word leaked out that it had originated in the Bank, they gave the document to an economics professor named **Karl Marx** and the bank's plan was published under the name, "**The Communist Manifesto**".

Most Americans have no real idea what liberty and freedom are. They have been "educated" for the last hundred years to think that the government *should* be their master. They were never taught the decision in Chisholm v. Georgia. Their own heritage has been stolen from them. To regain our Sovereign heritage *we must reeducate ourselves*.

Many people have told me, "*Man, I'd really like to do what you're doin', but . . . .*" And whatever follows the "*but*" is what that individual fears *before* God. As long as that particular fear is there, they will never leave the security blanket of their own god. This is really sad because God, Himself, will fight our battles.

It has been our experience that there is no significant government persecution of Sovereign Citizens once they enter the protection of God's jurisdiction. The instant a Citizen is out of debt, has no government contracts over his *person*, and has given up all government benefits, the bureaucrats seem happy enough just to ignore them. After all, if the Citizen does not owe the government anything, why should the bureaucrats pursue him?

The decision in Hale v. Henkel, 201 U.S. 43 tells us that the unfranchised Citizen owes nothing to the government because he receives nothing *from* the government. In the supreme Court's own words, "*He owes no such duty to the State, since he receives nothing therefrom, beyond the protection of his life and property.*" This is a supreme Court decision that is 100%

“on point” to support what is relayed in this book. If we have the courage to go against the brainwashing of the public school system and live without the entanglement of government contracts (benefits), then we will owe the government *nothing*. **Hale v. Henkel** is a popular citation used in legal briefs and memorandums filed in tax and civil rights cases by Patriots who are still “taxpayers.” Do you understand why the Patriots *always* lose when they use this argument? Isn’t it ridiculous to be in court over a contract matter and then cite **Hale v. Henkel**? I am speaking from personal experience, because I used **Hale v. Henkel** and I *lost*. I did not understand *why* I lost until I voided all of the government contracts and then experienced the *lack* of power that the government had over me, my property, and my family.

Like many people, I have a tendency to overcomplicate things and to learn *only* from personal experience. The solution was so simple and obvious that the answer had escaped me. I would have remained a free man if I had only been born without the ability to speak or write. I had *waived* all of my rights through written and verbal contracts and consent forms.

The experience of everyone I know who has taken the steps outlined in this book is that harassment and persecution *began* when they started taking an *active* role in protesting or resisting some government activity (tax, abortion, war, zoning ordinances, etc.) and *ended* when they gave up their SSN, driver’s license, auto registration, and voter registration. Please believe me when I tell you that there are many, many more contracts that should be canceled, but these are the ones that restrict your ability to make a living, your right to free travel, your right to own an automobile, and identify you as being under the penalty associated with choosing an earthly government over God’s government. Another good thing about starting with these contracts is that many of the secondary contracts are voided once the primary ones are canceled.

The other way in which we give power to the government is by simply *giving* it to them. There are four essential elements to a legal contract; - mutual assent, consideration, capacity, and lack of duress. A driver’s license (other than commercial) can not be a contract because there is no mutual assent. No one other than the driver signed the form. Although you paid a fee you received nothing in return. You already had the right to use the highways so the state could give you nothing. And, there was certainly an underlying threat to send you to jail if you refused to buy a license. Three of the four conditions for a contract are missing, so what you signed was a *binding consent form!*

The government is not interested in people once they are no longer eligible for government benefits. Look at the government’s own statistics on unemployment. The national and regional unemployment figures are **not** based on how many people are out of work, homeless, and hungry. The figures are based *only* on how many people are drawing an unemployment *benefit* check. The government does not care how many hungry children there are. All the government wants are favorable *statistics*. The government is *certainly* not interested in anyone who does not have a *contract* with them. Unfranchised Citizens cannot be used in a statistical model, so they are *ignored*.

When there are no longer any obligations on either side, the government loses what is called “legal interest” and they no longer have capacity to maintain a suit against you in court. To do so would be fraud on their part. Other than attempted traffic citations, the government does not habitually commit fraud of this type. They commit many *other* types of fraud, but not against Sovereigns to whom they owe no potential benefits and who have withdrawn their consent.

Is it becoming clear to you how simple it is to enjoy the Blessings of Liberty in America? Think about all of the problems that you have experienced with the government, government

regulations, and the banks. Can you think of a *single* example of loss of liberty that was not initiated by signing a contract or giving your consent? When I finally had the strength to ask myself that question, I had to admit that I had brought all of the problems on myself. Once I recognized what had caused my problems, I could then repent. Our Blessings of Liberty are restored when we legally vacate all of our compromising contracts and withdraw our consent to be treated like slaves.

---

**Black's Law Dictionary, Fifth Edition**

**“Contribution.** Under principle of “contribution,” a tort-feasor against whom a judgment is rendered is entitled to recover proportional shares of judgment from other joint tort-feasors whose negligence contributed to the injury and who were also liable to the plaintiff. **Dawson v. Contractors Transport Corp., 151 U.S. App.D.C. 401, 467 F.2d 727, 729.** The share of a loss payable by an insurer when contracts with two or more insurers cover the same loss. The insurer’s share of a loss under a coinsurance or similar provision. The sharing of a loss or payment among several. The act of any one or several of a number of co-debtors, co-sureties, etc., in reimbursing one of their number who has paid the whole debt or suffered the whole liability, each to the extent of his proportionate share. Right of one who has discharged a common liability to recover of another also liable, the aliquot portion which he ought to pay or bear. Several states have adopted the Uniform Contribution Among Tortfeasors Act.

In the civil law, a partition by which the creditors of an insolvent debtor divide among themselves the proceeds of his property proportionably to the amount of their respective credits. Division which is made among the heirs of the succession of the debts with which the succession is charged, according to the proportion which each is bound to bear.

In maritime law, where the property of one of several parties interested in a vessel and cargo has been voluntarily sacrificed for the common safety (as by throwing goods overboard to lighten the vessel), such loss must be made good by the contribution of the others, which is termed “general average.”

See also General average contributions; Indemnity.”

Page 297, 1979 edition, Black’s Law Dictionary

It appears that there is no way to make a *contribution* unless you are a “tort-feasor.” [author]

**“FICA. Federal Insurance Contributions Act.** The law that sets “Social Security” taxes and benefits.” – Black’s Law Dictionary, Fifth Edition, page 561 (1979)

“Ah think evrah-wahn oughta **con-tribute** theyah fayah shayah.”

- William Jefferson Clinton (1992)

Are you beginning to get the picture that there are politicians as low on the totem pole as the Governor of the State of Arkansas that understand the true nature of Social Security?

- Author

**Black's Law Dictionary – Fifth Edition  
West Publishing Co. 1979**

**Allodial.** Free; not holden of any lord or superior; owned without obligation of vassalage or fealty; the opposite of feudal.

**Allodium.** Land held absolutely in one's own right, and not of any lord or superior; land not subject to feudal duties or burdens. An estate held by absolute ownership, without recognizing any superior to whom any duty is due on account thereof.

**Author's note:** In the definition of Allodium, for "*duty that is due*" read "*real estate tax*". In Allodial, you can see that when you are paying land taxes, you are under *feudal* government. The Constitution guarantees us a *Republican* form of government. Where and how does a Republican form of government obtain the right to tax our land? More importantly, what can we do about it?

Your right to become an American instead of a U.S. citizen/subject.

15 Statutes at Large, Chapter 249 (Section 1), July 27, 1868

Chapter CCXLIX. – An Act concerning the Rights of American Citizens in foreign States

**Whereas** the right of expatriation is a natural and inherent right of all people, indispensable to the enjoyment of the rights of life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness;

**And** whereas in recognition of this principle this government has freely received emigrants from all nations, and invested them with the rights of citizenship;

**And** whereas it is claimed that such American citizens, with their descendants, are subjects of foreign states, owing allegiance to governments thereof;

**And** whereas it is necessary to the maintenance of public peace, and that this claim of foreign allegiance should be promptly and finally disavowed:

**Therefore,** Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America, in Congress assembled:

**That** any declaration, instruction, opinion, order, or decision, of any officer of this government, which denies, restricts, impairs, or questions the right of expatriation, is hereby declared inconsistent with the fundamental principles of this government.

**Author's Note**

In this Public Law, enacted eighteen days after the fourteenth amendment was supposedly ratified, we see that even the people born in Washington, DC and on Military Reservations possess the right of expatriation in order to become Citizens of the several states.

## 7 — FINANCIAL IDENTITY OF GOD'S PEOPLE

Deuteronomy 15:6; Proverbs 22:7

God created us to rule, not to be slaves. When we borrow money, we become the servants (slave) of the lender. When you have debts, *any* debts, and you desire to re-establish your Sovereignty, then you **MUST** get out of debt. The simplest definition of a Sovereign would be "*One who has no debts.*" Sovereigns are lenders and rulers, not borrowers and slaves.

Different people have different understandings of the term "**debt.**" I have talked with some people who think they are *not* in debt as long as they are current in all their installment payments, have not overdrawn their credit cards, and the bank has only sent one letter threatening to foreclose on a condo that they had already decided to let go because it was a bad investment. If their perception of reality is so far gone that they really feel *good* about the situation they are in, then they are not quite ready to make a strategic withdrawal from "the system." What they will find, when they finally look at their condition honestly, is that even without all the *personal* debt, as long as they remain obligated under the Social Security System, they are cosigners on a debt so massive they could never possibly pay it.

God's law says we are not to borrow *AT ALL*. People have the freedom of choice to obey this law and prosper or to disobey the law and crash with the rest of the economy. The heart and soul of the Sovereignty issue is *debt. Debt equals obligation.* When we are not in debt, then we have no obligations. When we are not in debt to a government, then we have no obligations to that government. When we obey God's law, then we have no debts and we are Sovereigns. See how it works? We have a little more groundwork to do before we can show you to how to get rid of the Social [in]Security Card.

When you buy a house on a private contract, this is *very* different from borrowing from a bank. Due to the provisions in case of default and other clauses in the land contract, what you are doing is purchasing a portion of the equity each month. Each month the previous owner transfers a portion of equity to you when you make a mortgage payment. Real *debt* is when you use *credit* cards or you ask for *credit* from a bank. If you are contracting to purchase an automobile, *personal* property, or anything else that *depreciates*, then you are contracting yourself *into debt*. The only way you can contract to obtain equity *without* incurring debt is if you are getting something that will last as long as the gold and silver will last, - like real estate, for instance. We will have extensive discussions of credit in the chapters on banking and remedies for debt.

I hope that reading what the Bible says about the rich ruling over the poor and the borrower being the servant of the lender will inspire you to really *do* something about debts you may have. There are some fairly rapid ways to write off (discharge) debts which are quite legal but the bankers have hidden them very well. Some of my teachers are expert in this field and may be able to render assistance. The creature is the *property* of the creator, so you give the debt back to the *creator* of the debt. Information about various techniques is situation specific and is better addressed in seminars, workshops, and in private consultation. God can release us from all forms of bondage. It would displease God very much if we carry away a burden of debt when we leave man's jurisdiction and enter God's protection, so learn all you can about discharging debt before you file your Sovereignty documents.

**This may be the shortest chapter of this book, but it is the most important one to understand.**

### FOR THE GREATER GOOD?

“The question still remains, how comes such a thing as “a nation” to exist? How do many millions of men, scattered over an extensive territory - each gifted by nature with individual freedom; required by the law of nature to call no man, or body of men, his masters; authorized by that law to seek his own happiness in his own way, to do what he will with himself and his property, so long as he does not trespass upon the equal liberty of others; authorized also, by that law, to defend his own rights, and redress his own wrongs; and to go to the assistance and defense of any of his fellow men who may be suffering any kind of injustice - how do many millions of such men *come to be a nation*, in the first place? How is it that each of them comes to be stripped of all his natural, God-given rights, and to be incorporated, compressed, compacted, and consolidated into a mass with other men, whom he never saw; with whom he has no contract; and towards many of whom he has no sentiments but fear, hatred, or contempt? How does he become subjected to the control of men like himself, who, by nature, had no authority over him; but who command him to do this and forbid him to do that, as if they were his sovereigns, and he their subject; and as if their wills and their interests were the only standards of his duties and his rights; and who compel him to submission under peril of confiscation, imprisonment, and death?

Clearly all this is the work of force, or fraud, or both.”

- Excerpt from *NO TREASON*, by Lysander Spooner (1869)

### PREMONITIONS OF WACO AND RUBY RIDGE

“When the will to rob, to imprison, and/or to kill once more asserts itself in the form of State policy somewhere, disguised as usual as a heroic gesture in behalf of “public safety,” “national security,” “safeguarding the state,” “ensuring the public welfare,” or any of a score or more of other related verbal reflexes designed to conceal the realities of statecraft from those whose lot it is to do the paying, the bleeding, and the dying, familiarity with Lysander Spooner should provide enlightenment as to why in these “crises” the impact of paper and ink limitations on the wielding of power is almost imperceptible in the face of politico-military bureaucratic initiative.” Excerpt from the Introduction to Lysander Spooner’s *NO TREASON*, by **James J. Martin** (1972)

On February 17, 1950, **James Warburg** (Federal Reserve Bank) stated before the Senate Foreign Relations Committee, “*We shall have one world government whether or not you like it, by conquest or consent.*”

Do you really believe there is no conspiracy to overthrow this nation? - Author

## 8 — GET OUT AND VOTE?

I Samuel, Chapter 8; Exodus 23:32; James 2:19

QUOTE: "If voting worked, they'd outlaw it!" – Olive Drab

The first time I was presented with the concept of refusing to vote (being an Army Veteran), I rejected the idea, outright. For a long time, I continued to argue that the *only* way I could help to correct the system was to vote. Then a couple of things happened. One is that I read First Samuel, Chapter 8, and the other was the election where Perot split the Republican vote and Hillary was elected as Co-President.

The 1992 election was like a replay of the election in 1912. Americans just don't seem to learn! In 1912, the Federal Reserve System was a plank in both parties' platforms. (The Republicans called it the "Aldrich Plan"). There was gridlock in Washington, DC. The Democrats controlled Congress. President Taft was a popular Republican president and he was bound to be re-elected. The bankers *would not* get the Aldrich Plan if they allowed Taft to be re-elected, because the Democrat Congress would vote it down. Wilson did not have a ghost of a chance to be elected so the bankers *couldn't* get the Federal Reserve System. Enter (stage *LEFT*), the Warburg brothers from Warburg's Bank in Germany. Each of the three Warburg brothers backed a different party. One of them supported Taft. The second brother backed Wilson. The third Warburg banker brought Teddy Roosevelt out of retirement and ran Teddy on the "Bull Moose Party." Teddy split the Republican vote. In a classic, rigged election, Wilson was elected. The Federal Reserve Act was passed. The 16<sup>th</sup> amendment was passed. Direct election of Senators was passed. And any one who voted was a party to treason in one way or another. Either by voting for Taft and the "Aldrich Plan," by voting for Wilson and the Federal Reserve, or by voting for Teddy, because the *only* reason that the bankers ran Teddy was to make sure that Wilson was elected. The exact machinations are documented in "Secrets of the Federal Reserve," by Eustace Mullins.

The same thing happened in 1992. George Bush was as popular as Ronald Reagan had been because Bush had just won the "Gulf War." Bush was totally ineffective in promoting the agenda of the New World Order because the Democrats controlled Congress and "Gridlock" was the buzzword of the day. Clinton was backed by all the major media but could not be elected because Bush was so popular. Enter, *Ross Perot*. Perot's *only* selling point was that he *wasn't* a politician. Perot believed in appointing homosexuals to high government positions and Perot was a big proponent of government-funded murder (public funded abortion-on-demand). I voted for Ross Perot, anyway. He would have made an awful president. If he had won then I would have been culpable for all of the crimes committed while he was in office. The bad thing is not the rejection of any other candidate by voting, but because God's form of government is *not* on the ticket, voting for *any* person on the ticket amounts to a rejection of God.

I'll be honest with you. If you can find any place in the Bible where God tells His people to participate in electing people as officers in government corporations, I will certainly give it due consideration. What I have found in the scriptures leads me to believe that I should *not* vote on candidates running for an office in a governmental corporation. Voter registration amounts to another sneaky little *contract*. You have to sign your name, and I will bet that you do not read everything to which you sign your name. Usually you must swear yourself to be a fourteenth amendment, U. S. citizen. And never forget, if you happen to select the winning candidate and then his administration threatens, intimidates, and harasses you, go back and read

**First Samuel 8:18** before you even *think* about asking God to help you out of your troubles. *You* selected those people to threaten, intimidate, and harass you. *God* didn't. How can God go against His own word for someone who was disobedient to Him?

Let's take a look at **First Samuel, Chapter 8.**

- 8:3** The people complain about a couple of judges taking bribes;  
**8:7** Rejecting the entire system and asking to replace it with one like the other nations had amounted to rejection of God;  
**8:11 – 17** This is what *always happens* in a society that rejects God's government;  
**8:18** God will *never (not even in America)* hear the cries for relief of people who reject His government.

When selecting any form of government *other* than the system of God's Law and common law judges, which God gave to Moses, it would not make a particle of difference whether the head honcho were called "Your Highness," "Shah," "Prime Minister," or "Madam President." The result of *participation* in selecting that government would bring on the penalty of **verse 18**. This curse was lifted in America on July 4, 1776, with the Declaration of Independence. It was reinstated a few years later over Washington, DC with Article 1, Section 8, clause 17 of the constitution when Congress, not God, was given exclusive jurisdiction for making the law over that area.

Yes, Samuel's sons were corrupt. They were taking bribes. However, the correct solution *wasn't* to junk the entire system. That is like throwing the baby out with his bath water. The correct solution was to put the judges to the penalty of felony breach of oath as a deterrent to others who may have been tempted to commit the same offense.

The corrupting influence of two, bribe-taking judges is not nearly as wide spread as the corrupting influence of a central government under man's rule. The kings of Israel went far beyond what God warned of, even to the point of losing possession of the land God promised to Abraham. The corruption has gone so far in America that Congress has passed into law something called the "Debt for Nature Swap." This is an amendment to the **Bretton Woods Agreements Act** (the treaty setting up the IMF, WTO, and World Bank) which allows Congress to give the IMF Sovereign *American* Soil as *partial* payments on *Washington, DC's* debt. All of the "Biosphere Reserves" you may see, like the "Organpipe Cactus National Monument, *A Biosphere Reserve*, are no longer American, they *belong* to the IMF and are *administered* by the **United Nations**. However, the U. S. taxpayers are still footing the bill to run them! Corruption in the American government is causing a loss of national homeland here, just as surely as it did in Israel. Babylon is not far away.

A thorough study of all of the major candidates since 1912 will reveal that all voting has been a selection from a list of candidates put up by a single group of extremely powerful International Bankers and industrialists (i.e., I. G. Farben and the Bilderbergers). All that you get to *vote* for the lesser of two evils. What *gets elected* is the *evil* of two *lessers*.

Let me ask you a serious question. If you really think that God wants you to participate in a government like this one, why isn't there a candidate *anywhere* that really believes in God and *obeys* Him? (Even the Devil *believes* in God; he just doesn't *obey*.) The temptation to vote for a presidential candidate just because you happen to know more about the evil of a second candidate does not qualify the first candidate as a *Godly* choice, does it? A candidate must have many *political debts* in order to be on the ballot. *Political* debts are still *debts*, and **political debtors** are **political slaves**. Remember the universal principle we looked at earlier? *In*

---

*making any choice, we are automatically bound to accept ALL the results of that choice, be they pleasing or displeasing.* There are two sides to the pill called "freedom of choice," a sweet side and a bitter side, but it is all one pill. If you take the pill (go into a voting booth), you have to live with the results when they count the ballots.

"Covenant" is another word for "contract." We are required to sign a contract in order to get a voter registration card. **Exodus 23:32** says that we are to make *no covenant* with the governments and gods of the adversary. I trust that you will do what you believe is the right thing, based upon *your* best understanding of the Bible. I also hope that you understand why so many others have given up their voter registration cards. If you think you must retain your right to participate in the government elections, then please pray for direction and enlightenment as to which candidate is *truly* righteous before casting your ballot. Remember what George Wallace said about third party candidacy? He said, "*The only vote you cast that doesn't count is the vote you cast for someone who doesn't truly reflect your views.*" It would sure be nice to find such a person's name on a ballot.

Because the Citizens without Social Security Contracts are the Sovereigns, *not the government*, we have *every right* to have our say on issues that effect our lives. Voting on issues is the exercise of directing the activities of our servant. If it were not for the fact that in so doing, we were participating in granting them the pretended power to make laws, voting for representatives and senators might even be acceptable.

The Senate was set up to be elected by the legislature of each state and Article Five secures the right of each *STATE* to equal suffrage *IN THE SENATE* unless *they* consent otherwise. A state can NOT, by majority vote of the U. S. congress or by Constitutional amendment by other than UNANIMOUS vote, be deprived of its right to be represented. For the legislature of a Sovereign State to be denied their two votes in the Senate requires *their own consent*. The amendment making the election of Senators by direct vote of the people violated the right of the states to be represented in the senate.

The seventeenth amendment *fundamentally altered* our form of government by having the Senate elected by the people. Following the direct vote of Senators by the people, more power and less accountability has been conferred upon the federal government. The Founding Fathers understood that this would happen. That is why they formed a **Republic** and *abhorred a democracy*. The Founding Fathers did their best to set up a government consisting of law and common law judges, with some low-level *administrators* of the law in the executive department. They were trying to implement what they saw in the Bible. What America has now is an illegal, socialist democracy. Until and unless the States that did not vote to give up their rights to be represented in the Senate regain their right to representation, then *all acts passed by congress are unlawful*.

The Founding Fathers understood that power corrupts and the more power, the more corruption. That is why they placed the limitations on federal power the way they did. It is really too bad that the best parts of the Constitution went out the window with the so-called thirteenth amendment and the Constitution was dead and in its grave by 1913, the year when the Federal Reserve Act, the income tax amendment, and direct election of senators amendment took effect. I would like to be able to vote on *issues*, but I do not know how to cast a vote within the bounds of Natural Law. Because I am a Sovereign American Citizen of Washington Republic, I would only be able to vote as one.

## LEGAL PLUNDER

- or -

### What is “legal” and what is “right?”

“Sometimes the law defends plunder and participates in it. Thus, the beneficiaries are spared the shame, danger, and scruple which their acts would otherwise involve. Sometimes the law places the whole apparatus of judges, police, prisons, and gendarmes at the service of the plunderers, and treats the victim – when he defends himself – as a criminal. In short, there is legal plunder . . .”

Frederic Bastiat – “The Law” (1850)

“The law is perverted! And the police powers of the state perverted along with it! The law, I say, not only turned from its proper purpose but made to follow an entirely contrary purpose! The law became the weapon of every kind of greed! Instead of checking crime, the law itself is guilty of the evils it is supposed to punish! If this is true, it is a serious fact, and moral duty requires me to call the attention of my fellow citizens to it.”

Frederic Bastiat, French Statesman, Economist, and Author – “The Law” (1850)

### GOD’S NATURAL LAW, OR MAN’S LAW. THE CHOICE IS OURS.

To Thomas F. Bayard, of Delaware;

Sir-I have read your letter to Rev. Lyman Abbott, in which you express the opinion that it is at least possible for a man to be a legislator (under the Constitution of the United States) and yet be an honest man.

This proposition implies that you hold it to be at least possible that some four hundred men should, by some process or other, become invested with the right to make laws of their own-that is, *laws wholly of their own device*, and therefore necessarily distinct from the law of nature, or the principles of natural justice; and that these laws of their own making shall be really and truly obligatory upon the people of the United States; and that, therefore, the people may rightfully be compelled to obey them.

All this implies that you are of the opinion that the Congress of the United States, of which you are a member, has, by some process or other, become possessed of some *right of arbitrary dominion* over the people of the United States; which right of arbitrary dominion is not given by, and is, therefore, necessarily in conflict with, the law of nature, the principles of natural justice, and the natural rights of men, as individuals. All this is necessarily implied in the idea that the Congress now possesses any right whatever to make any laws whatever, of its own device-that is, any laws that shall be either more, less, or other than that natural law, which it can neither make, unmake, nor alter-and cause them to be enforced upon the people of the United States, or any of them, against their will. . . .

from “*A Letter to Thomas F. Bayard*” by Lysander Spooner, May 22, 1882

## 9 — GOD GAVE US OUR COMMON LAW

Exodus 18:13-26, Exodus Chapters 20 -24, Deuteronomy 12:8, Deuteronomy 13:18, and Proverbs 21:2

Our forefathers studied the Bible to discover the ideal form of government. Although they knew the government that they created had some built-in flaws, they still did the best they could. The Bible shows us a government that has God as its *only* Lawgiver and/or Legislator and the judicial branch consists of common law courts and judges. “*We, the People*” made up the executive branch of God’s government. Exodus gives us a clear look at a government of Law (the **WHOLE** law, not just the ten commandments) and common law judges. It wasn’t until Nimrod and his Tower of Babel that any man believed he had the authority to *legislate*. The courts described are very similar to our small claims, magistrates, and the supreme Court.

The authors of the Constitution evidently erred only in creating the legislative and executive branches of government (art. 1, sec. 8, clause 17), because in the Bible, *God* was the *only* Lawgiver and *the People* were to carry out (*execute*) His statutes. A graphic example of the people being the *executive* branch of government is that the father or brother of a woman who had been raped was the one who was to *execute* the rapist.

A good introduction to “The Law” as regarding social interaction, is found in **Exodus, Chapters 20 - 24**. If you’ve seen the size of the law library in your local courthouse you may be amazed that God planned for an entire society to be governed with so few laws. Then again, if you have ever had to deal with *man’s* law, you are amazed that *man’s* system can function *at all!*

The Law says that we are to diligently teach the law to *our own* children. We are to talk about the law morning and night, while working and while traveling. We are to **DO** (perform) God’s Law (what is right) as we see it (in our own eyes).

In Proverbs, we read that *all* men do what is right in their own eyes. Don’t *you?* Since honest people will always have honest differences of opinion, God’s Law provides for a way to resolve those differences. We go to the closest judge and each explains his side of the dispute. We establish the truth of each allegation either with physical evidence or else out of the mouths of two or three witnesses. The judge examines the evidence, listens to the witnesses, consults the Law, and renders a decision. Most disputes will end right there. Under American common law, the *jury* is the judge.

If the subject matter or the remedy sought is beyond the scope or ability of that particular judge or if both parties to the suit are not satisfied that the decision is a correct interpretation of the Law, then the matter is taken to a higher judge. Please understand that it would not be common to have an endless series of appeals just because you did not like the verdict, as happens in virtually all capital punishment cases today. Appeals are allowed only if there is an honest question about how the Law was applied to the issues. Where the Law has no ambiguity and the decision is based on the Law, there is no appeal (certiorari denied). Where both parties are obedient Children of God, and the Law has no ambiguity, there would usually be no cause of action in the first place.

Where an extreme penalty would be imposed for a violation of law, an offender (or alleged offender) could flee to a City of Refuge and be safe from judgment until he either died a natural death or believed that he could get a fair trial and an acceptable judgment. Flight by a suspect to a City of Refuge would be acceptable to the victim as an alternative to revenge because, first of all, he would never be victimized by the suspect again, second, due to the type

of people who go there and the physical environment surrounding the Cities of Refuge, I doubt if any person would move there by choice. Flight to a City of Refuge would be the same thing as sentencing yourself to prison for a lifetime at hard labor.

The Law, as related in Exodus, Leviticus, and Deuteronomy is very exciting reading. So far, we have only talked about a small part of the Law. Biblical Law is wonderful in its simplicity and in its ability to promote the peace, harmony, and general welfare of a society.

Many of today's "Christian" ministers claim it is *impossible* to follow the Law and that we are no longer under the old Law. These ministers are misreading **Galatians 2:16** and **5:14**. These ministers would do well to study **James 1:25**, **Romans 2:12-13**, **3:31**, **7:12**, and **22-25**, and especially **Matthew 28:20**. There are obviously many more meanings for the word "*law*" than there are for the word "*love*," yet any modern minister can talk for hours about the differences between "agape," "phyllos," and "eros." These same ministers may not be any more than dimly aware of the differences between the Ten Commandments, the social law, and the religious or sacrificial law. In addition to these three kinds of law, **Romans 8:1-2** (indeed, the whole chapter) talks about even more kinds of law.

More than one kind of law is referred to in **Matthew 5:17-20**. Jesus said He was ending *neither* the Law *nor* the Prophets. He said He did not come to destroy but to *fulfill*. The only law He could *fulfill* by giving Himself as a sacrifice is the religious or sacrificial law. It is ridiculous almost to the point of being offensive to teach that after Jesus' final Passover, it is OK to commit adultery and murder or to allow attack dogs to run loose on unfenced property.

Perhaps the strongest evidence that Christians have not been relieved of their duty to perform under all but the *sacrificial* laws are Jesus' own words in **Matthew 28:20**. Anyone claiming to believe that Jesus is God, yet *refusing* to believe that they are still obligated to perform under the Social Law, must come to terms with the fact that the Ten Commandments and social law were written by *that same God*.

Perhaps I got a bit far afield here in defending the Law as being relevant to our times, but I believe that it is part and parcel of the Sovereignty issue. Remember, in Hosea we read that God's people were being destroyed because they had forgotten the Law of God. I think that we "*forgot*" it because we were never *taught* it in the first place. More on *why* we were not taught the Law will come later when discussing the contracts signed by incorporated churches. Remember the universal principle that *we show who our God is by who's law we study and keep*.

## Who has dominion over the earth?

So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.

"Then God blessed them, and God said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth." - Genesis 1:27-28 [NKJV]

Man, therefore, is the sovereign, with dominion over the earth, and man is to serve and obey his Creator. God did not grant dominion over this earth to any government of man.

## 10 — PITFALLS IN THE COURTS

Matthew 5:25

In the spring of 1996, the Federal Bureau of Incineration (FBI) blockaded Justus Township, which is near Jordan, Montana. The best information I have managed to gather on the situation has come from a variety of sources including Soldier of Fortune Magazine (suspected of being a CIA front, by some), news media (*they* certainly don't have any axe to grind, *do they?*), from the written accounts that appeared in Jack McLamb's *Aid & Abet* newsletter, and from personal conversations with an immediate family relative of one of the FBI agents on the scene. I am stating, up front, that what I am about to say in regard to Justus Township does *not* conform to the "best evidence rule!"

The Citizens of Justus Township had discharged some of their private debt on some private property (a motor home and some other things) with warrants drawn against a multi-million dollar lien that they had filed against the federal government. When presented to the United States for collection, some of the warrants were not honored, although many of them were. Bank fraud was alleged, although there is not a bank involved. Their warrants were not bank drafts, checks, certificates of deposit, or promissory notes under UCC 3-104(2)(a through d). The *problem* with the liens and warrants is one of legal capacity. If they have not correctly canceled their SSN's, then they are still instrumentalities of the United States so *THEY ARE* the United States [28 USC 3002(15)(C)] and *just as liable for the liens as Washington, DC!* The reason that no one tells "*We, the People*" about our legal disability is because Judges are instructed to take "*silent judicial notice*" of the bankruptcy.

The land in Justus Township had been in the family of one of the Township's Citizens for several generations. What is *unknown* is whether the owners of the land had been tricked into using the land as collateral on the National Debt. The *result* of the confrontation would indicate that the land was actually owned by the government under one of their sneaky little contracts. I am not aware at this time if, or how many, of the Freemen were still eligible for or claiming government benefits. If they were under legal disability via their SSN or bank card contracts, they may not have had legal capacity to form the common law court. It looks as if they had omitted the step of securing *allodial title* to the land. If so, they were merely tenants and could be evicted by the true owner, - the government.

Justus Township formed their own, possibly legal, common law court and this, *in my opinion*, was the heart of the federal government's *fear* of the Freemen living in Justus Township. I make mention of the problems of the good people living in Justus Township to firmly anchor in your mind the *absolute necessity* of proceeding in the proper sequence to assure your own personal safety. This is the reason we need to use some *Strategy* during our *Withdrawal*.

*It is not enough just to be able to prove that the government is committing fraud.* You *also* must know and *do* the correct things to *release yourself from their control*. If you follow the tried and proven process of restoring your Sovereignty as presented within these pages, you should never find yourself in front of a judge or in man's courts. If you do find yourself in court, then either the government intends to turn you into a martyr or else you have defiantly done something wrong. You must carefully analyze what you have done wrong and repent (*correct what you have done by doing it differently*). With that having been clearly stated, we will now examine a few procedures that have helped some others to extract themselves from the clutches of the courts.

---

### ACCESS TO COMMON LAW

The **Standard Coinage Act of 1792** fixed the value of one dollar as being measured in a certain weight of silver. **Money**, therefore, is expressed as a **unit of weight in metallic silver**, not a number printed on a *negotiable instrument*. At today's prices, you may exchange twenty *dollars* for roughly \$100.00 in Federal Reserve *debt instruments*. In 1977, **Mr. Russell Munk**, then Assistant General Counsel for the Department of the Treasury, said, "**Federal Reserve Notes are not dollars.**"

The seventh amendment to the U. S. Constitution guarantees a common law remedy in matters where the amount of value in controversy exceeds the value of twenty *silver* dollars. Exchanges that use only *negotiable instruments* are *not* protected by the seventh amendment. Our access to seventh amendment protection is in place if every piece of durable goods that we purchase is made with at least twenty silver dollars *plus* negotiable instruments. I would not bother using silver or gold to buy food, paper, or plastic because they are going to be used up soon anyway. I would *definitely* use silver to buy hunting equipment, automobiles, boats, computers, or anything else that retains its value for more than a few months.

Sovereigns seek the protection of the common law because with the common law, the jury is the only judge of the law and the fact. Under the Roman *Civil* Law Procedure that is used in the courts today, the jury is told that they are the judges of the *fact* and the pettifogger shyster in the little black bat-suit is the judge of the *law*. A copy of the Citizens' Rule Book by Witten Printers, Phoenix, Arizona is included with every copy of *Strategic Withdrawal* because without a good understanding of our American right to common law juries, the word "liberty" may only be used in *past tense*. Please read and study your Citizens' Rule Book. I buy them by the box and give them away. Since you have one of these excellent booklets, I will trust you to read it and we will go on with directions on *how to use* what you learn from your CRB.

We need to learn how to reserve our common law remedies in event of a controversy. The easiest way to do this is to *NEVER* sign a contract with the government, but if we *do* sign a contract, then do so *only* under *reservation of rights*. **UCC § 1-103, note #6** tells us that the *effect* of signing a contract under *reservation of rights* reserves our common law remedies. **UCC 1-207** shows us *how* to reserve those rights. We should never sign a government consent form. When we have a right to do something, we are foolish to ask the government for permission to do that thing.

A Constitutional protection of *accused* persons is that the Citizen is entitled to know the **nature of the charge** against him. The nature of the charge would also include the nature of the "*person*" making the complaint, and the nature of the court in which the charge is prosecuted. The courts are so sensitive to this right they have even made it a procedure violation to proceed with a trial until and unless the defendant understands the nature of the charge against him.

Let's illustrate the "**nature of the charge**" clause with a little court room scene:

**Judge:** **Mr. John Doe**, you have been charged with violation of Revised Code of Washington (RCW) number **###.##.####**, which is speed in excess of the absolute limit on an interstate highway. Do you understand these charges as I have read them to you?

**Citizen Accused:** Yes, Your Honor.

**Judge:** How do you plead?

**Citizen Accused:** Not guilty, your Honor.

**Judge:** Trial will be next Wednesday at 9:00 AM. *Next case!*

Then, when John comes back to court, he is found guilty and pays a fine.

Does John understand the charges? I doubt it, or he wouldn't be there in the first place. The judge knows that there is less than a 1% chance that Mr. Doe understands the charges (most *lawyers* don't even understand them), but since the judge has an affirmative answer *on the record*, he may now proceed to fine John for violation of contract and increase the revenue of the state and, incidentally, his own retirement fund.

Let's try this same Citizen in another court about three months later, after you gave him your copy of the Citizens' Rule Book and he has a little more *knowledge of his rights*.

**Judge:** Mr. John Doe, you have been charged with violation of Revised Code of Washington number ##.###.##, which is speed in excess of the absolute limit on an interstate highway. Do you understand these charges as I have read them to you?

**Citizen Accused:** (politely) *No, Your Honor.*

**Judge:** (surprised) WHAT DO YOU MEAN YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND? WHAT'S SO HARD TO UNDERSTAND ABOUT GOING OVER THE SPEED LIMIT?

**Citizen Accused:** What I don't understand, Your Honor, is the *nature of the charge*. Would you please explain the *nature* of this charge to me?

**Judge:** (Now he's really hot!) ***YOU WERE GOING OVER THE SPEED LIMIT AND GOT CAUGHT! NOW DO YOU UNDERSTAND?***

**Citizen Accused:** No, Your Honor. Although you have obviously formed an opinion on the subject matter before hearing the evidence, you have not explained the *nature* of the charge. Is it a **criminal** charge? Is it a **Civil** charge? Is it a **common-law** charge? Is it **Admiralty** or **Maritime**? Is the charge brought under Martial law? Am I being charged with a violation of **Bankruptcy regulations**? What is the **nature of the Plaintiff**? Is the Plaintiff a corporation, a natural person, or a group of natural persons? And what is the **nature of this court**? Is this court a martial law court?

**Judge:** (interrupting) I can see we aren't getting anywhere with this case. Does the prosecutor have any reason not to dismiss? Hearing no objection, this case is dismissed. Next case?

**Citizen Accused:** Just a minute, your Honor, I am moving for expenses incurred to defend myself against these frivolous charges in the amount of \$1,250.00!

They don't always dismiss cases where competent Citizens defend themselves. Sometimes they continue (delay) the case until the statutory time limit for a speedy trial has expired and *then* they drop it. On the other hand, when the government is looking for a martyr, there is nothing that you can do that is right and you may never see daylight again no matter what you do.

Citizen John Doe, in our little one-act play, was so happy with the results of his second experience in court that he began studying information he obtained from books on legal self-defense. Sure enough, a few months later John is caught in a revenue enhancement scheme called a "speed trap" and John is required to make another appearance in court. When he shows up in court, he has at least three of his **Sovereign Court Action Reporters** and **Enforcers (SCARE)** group with him.

**Judge:** Next case.

**Bailiff:** City of Oak Harbor v. John Doe

**Citizen Accused:** (holding a plain, unfringed U. S. Flag) I am putting in an appearance under the jurisdiction and venue of the American Flag of Peace, Your Honor.

**Judge:** Who are you?

**All three SCARE members (in order):** That's John Doe. That's John Doe. That's John Doe. (Now John can't be arrested for failure to appear because he has just been identified by three people as being present in court.)

**Judge:** Mr. John Doe, will you state your name, for the record?

**Citizen Accused:** Your Honor, I have no present contract with you or your martial law court and I will not create one by giving my name. I stand under the jurisdiction of the flag of peace of the American Constitution.....(etc.)..

David Miller C/O P.O. Box 787, Brookfield, Wisconsin [53008] has written and lectured extensively on exactly how to use this procedure. The procedure worked for a while and when the courts found a way around it, David found a way to make it work again. The state of Wisconsin is said to have almost a hundred lawyers and legal researchers continually working on methods to offset David's court procedure. David is working on the procedure full-time also, and is staying one step ahead of the despots. I highly recommend contacting David and learning what he has to share. I have read his material and it looks legally sound. He warns *against* trying to compete in or control a martial law court. You will have to study his procedure, make up your own mind, and take your own chances. I am going to continue to do the things that will keep me from having to go to court *at all!*

Once in a great while someone in your group will run across a judge who really enjoys the *pain* you can cause him, and that judge will *insist* on taking you to trial. Remember this, a *trial de novo* (don't *ever* do an *appeal*) can *only* be granted based on mistakes made by the judge, so be polite, ask your questions, and let the judge's own answers hang him. If you take enough time to understand how to legally defend yourself, your defense can cost very little in actual money. The government, on the other hand, must pay for each and every minute of time that their lawyers are tied up doing research and writing briefs. It costs them from \$350,000.00 to \$500,000.00 to defend against a carefully prepared civil rights suit and they are *very* aware of their budget allocations.

### PRESUMPTIONS

When Citizens begin having problems with enforcement procedures used by bureaucrats, there is usually a lot of confusion as to how the government and the courts justify their actions. One of the least discussed, yet easiest to explain, methods is the *power of presumption* [RULES OF EVIDENCE, Rule 301]. There are **Rebuttable Presumptions** and there are **Irrebuttable Presumptions**. An example of an *Irrebuttable Presumption* is: "*It is presumed that any human being under the age of seven years lacks sufficient understanding of consequences and lacks sufficient organization abilities to commit a felony.*" This presumption would be an *absolute bar* to prosecuting anyone under the age of seven for a felony.

Rebuttable presumptions *arise out of a given set of circumstances* and are *accepted as fact* unless overcome by *evidence*. When you confront the bureaucrats in court, you do it with a whole pot-full of presumptions against you. If you are going to fight them on their turf, then you must not only overcome the presumptions with evidence, but also get a judge who will force his fellow attorneys to recognize the *real* evidence.

Some rebuttable presumptions of which you must be aware are:

1. **All persons are presumed to be sane.**
2. **Any sane person is presumed to intend the natural and probable results of his deliberate acts.**
3. **A person is presumed to understand and concur with the content of any instrument bearing his voluntary signature.**
4. **All public servants are presumed to act within the law and not to exceed their authority.**

The list of presumptions is too long to be included in this book but just looking at these four examples will give you an idea of what you are up against when dealing with the courts and with the bureaucrats. Although some bureaucrats may act like it, and may even *say* it, it is *NOT* an irrefutable presumption that all human beings are *taxpayers*. The definition of “*taxpayer*” is very tightly controlled by the government. An *individual taxpayer* is a *Social Security Card holder* and no one else! The word, “*Employer*” is just as rigidly controlled. You may have people working for you, but you are *not* an “*employer*” unless you have signed up for an “*Employer Identification Number (EIN)*.” If you describe *yourself* as an “*employer*” then you provide presumptive evidence that you have an EIN and provide an avenue for bureaucrats to harass you.

To overcome a rebuttable presumption when filing a lawsuit or counter-suit, you will present a paragraph of your COMPLAINT somewhat like this:

Paragraph ## **While it is a well-established evidentiary presumption that all public servants are presumed to act within the law and not to exceed their authority, such presumption is no substitute for an evidentiary fact.** In the instant matter, defendant Joe Blow did not act within the law and did exceed Joe Blow’s authority when causing a fraudulent security to be filed against \_\_\_\_\_, which is the property of Plaintiff John Doe. An IRS “*Notice of Lien*” which does not arise out of a valid assessment is a fraudulent security within the meaning of **18 USC § 513(a)**. A certified copy of the fraudulent security is filed with this COMPLAINT and marked EXHIBIT ##. A certified copy of the response by the IRS which shows no valid assessment was made before issuing the lien is filed with this complaint and marked as EXHIBIT ##. (and so on)

There is a lot to learn about presumptions and how to overcome them. You will learn how to prevent presumptions from having a harmful effect on *you* by wording your contracts more carefully. Then you won’t have to go to court in the first place.

The **ONLY** rules of court procedure you should obtain or study (for *defense* in MAN’S courts) are the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure. Federal rules will apply since the U. S. Military flag is the one in the courtroom and the ultimate court of appeal is the U. S. Supreme Court. The United States Supreme Court is **not a judicial court. IT IS AN EXECUTIVE BRANCH, MARTIAL LAW COURT!** [Supreme Court Rule 45.1] Since your local traffic court will display the military flag of war and draw its jurisdiction therefrom, then federal rules apply. The judges in lower courts have accepted the Federal Rules when this has been pointed out to them. Don’t bother with State or county rulebooks.

If you are a defendant in a matter and they coerce you (force you) behind the bar, that is, they leave the handcuffs on you and are touching you all the way inside the fenced-off area in the front of the courtroom, then the matter must be dismissed due to coerced jurisdiction. *Coerced* jurisdiction equals *no* jurisdiction. **28 USC § 1359** covers collusive joining. Their suit

is lost in trial de novo in superior court if they do not drop the charges immediately. In 1998, this was made obvious to the observing public when the Montana Freemen were not forced into the courtroom.

It is a relatively simple procedure to recuse (dismiss) a judge for prejudice under 28 USC § 144. All Judges have Social Security Numbers, which makes them “taxpayers.” If a disobedient slave charged in a revenue enhancement scheme (has SSN, must pay a fine) comes in front of the judge, the judge is aware that any revenue not raised by a tax (fine) on the defendant must be made up by other taxpayers, such as *himself*. The judge, quite obviously, has a financial conflict of interest in the outcome of the trial and must recuse himself or any ruling he makes will be overturned. Furthermore, if the case is titled “United States v John Doe” then the judge must disqualify himself because he is the plaintiff, since having a SSN makes him an *instrumentality of the U. S.* then under 28 USC § 3002(15)( C ) the judge *is* the United States. If the case is titled “People of the United States v. John Doe” the judge must *still* recuse himself because he has declared himself to be a resident of Washington, DC when he declared himself to be a United States citizen on his SS-5 form. *A plaintiff cannot sit as a judge in a fair and impartial hearing.*

It is *possible* to disqualify a judge, but how do we go about it? Look up 28 USC § 144. It is in your Federal Rules of Civil Procedure book. 28 USC § 144 says you may disqualify a judge by filing a **timely** and **sufficient** affidavit which is to be accompanied by a certificate by the counsel of record stating the affidavit is made in good faith. Just because **you** may be your own counsel of record and **you** filed the affidavit does not relieve **you** of the job of filing the certification. **You** file them *both*.

The next questions are, “What is *timely*?” and “What is *sufficient*?”

“**Timely**” means filing not less than ten days before the beginning of the **term** at which the proceedings will be heard. To get a final filing date, call the clerk of the court A.S.A.P. and have him give you the final filing date over the phone. While you are at it, ask him to send you written confirmation through the mail. Do I need to remind you to go to Radio Shack and buy their device to put on your phone so you can record all these phone calls? No, it is not illegal as long as *one* of the parties (that’s *you*) knows that the conversation is being recorded. Don’t let them kid you. They record you, too. They justify recording all of their calls in the name of counter-terrorism. So can you.

“**Sufficient**” means that you have to *clearly set forth the reasons* (from the above paragraphs, plus anything else that applies) *and* that these reasons cause *you to believe* the judge has a *personal bias*. Don’t get innovative with the wording or you’ll have your objection to the judge overruled because of insufficiency. Keep it simple. Something like:

**Paragraph ##** The Judge must be disqualified under 28 USC § 144 because the Judge has a Social Security Number which means that the judge is the plaintiff, because the judge is an instrumentality of the United States [(28 USC § 3002(15)( C )]. Since the judge is the plaintiff, the Defendant (name) believes the Defendant (name) can not receive a fair and impartial trial because defendant (name) believes the judge has a personal bias.

Notice that no *pronouns* were used. If your case were to reach the Supreme Court and you have used a pronoun *ANYWHERE*, you run the risk of having it refused and denied for vagueness. Use only proper nouns and proper names. David Miller is the expert on this.

28 USC § 144 says that you may only file one such affidavit for dismissal in any case, but if you are denied the right to have an obviously biased judge dismissed from presiding over a matter in which he has a personal bias or financial conflict of interest then any adverse judgment

would be overturned in a trial de novo. In the past, the courts have been sensitive to the issue of “fair trial.” There’s no guarantee of how sensitive the judges will be in the future. We could **make** them more sensitive if we hauled a few judges into common law courts to defend themselves against **felony breach of oath**.

Whereas you may only file one affidavit under **28 USC § 144**, you may file as many *motions* as you wish under **28 USC § 455** requesting the judge to recuse *himself*. Because the reasons you give in your supporting memorandum will make it obvious that any decision he may render would have to be overturned, he will most likely either recuse himself or have the prosecutor drop the charges.

At one time, there was a procedure where a defendant could *demur to the complaint*. Some states still have it. Demur has been abolished and hidden in **allocution**. If an objection is raised in a timely manner and *overruled*, you may bring it up *again* under allocution and it must be considered again at that time. Look up the *full* definition of “allocution” in *Black’s*.

Here is a little one-act play illustrating allocution.

**Judge:** Mr. John Doe, you have been **found guilty** of the crime of distributing subversive literature. Do you wish to make any statement before I pronounce sentence?

**Convicted Citizen:** I didn’t do it! I didn’t do it! You got the wrong guy! I’m innocent! You can’t do this to me! I’ve got rights!

**Judge:** I hereby sentence you to twelve years at hard labor for the crime of distributing subversive literature.

John made a totally inappropriate response. I know it looks good on television, but it is inappropriate *court procedure*. Sadly, it also happens all the time in real life. The judges are aware that the defendant’s attorney should have prepared him to make an *appropriate* response, but that is how much justice you find in the justice system.

A properly prepared defendant would have responded more like this:

**Judge:** Mr. John Doe, you have been found guilty of the crime of distributing subversive literature. Do you wish to make any statement before I pronounce sentence?

**Semi-Convicted Citizen:** Yes, Your Honor, I *do* wish to make an Allocution statement: My right guaranteed in the Constitution for the united States of America to have a fair and impartial trial by a jury of my peers was violated in the following ways and on the following dates and times: (Here, he reads a list of the written and verbal objections he has made during the course of the trial.) ... and for these reasons, Your Honor, it would be *illegal* for this court to render a judgment in this case.

**Judge:** \_\_\_\_\_

I have no idea how a judge would respond to a properly delivered allocution statement because I have never heard of one being given. The judge would most likely have to step back into chambers, pick up his “bench book,” and look up his proper response. In any case, you cannot be *sentenced* until all of the issues brought up in allocution have been argued in front of someone who has the authority over-rule this judge’s denial of your objections and all of your objections are *again* over ruled.

---

### THREE TYPES OF COURTS

There are three branches of government: *legislative*, *executive*, and *judicial*. These branches of government were set up by Articles I, II, and III of the U. S. Constitution and each of these branches of government has its *own kind of court*. The judicial branch contains some clerical staff, process servers, payroll personnel, and record keeping, but otherwise, it is *virtually all court*.

The Legislature has *legislative tribunals*. A few years ago, many Americans sat in front of their television sets and watched Ollie North sit there with a straight face and lie to a *legislative tribunal*. There are reported to be over two hundred references to North's knowledge that he was importing drugs for sale in this country in the documents that he did *not* shred. Now, Ollie is an FCC approved "Talk Show Host." Go figure.

The executive branch contains the armed forces and therefore *all military courts and martial law courts are under the direct control of the president*. Because **Supreme Court Rule 45.1** says that all process of that court is in the name of the president of the United States, the Supreme Court can **ONLY** be an executive branch (martial law) court. Because the ultimate court of appeal is a martial law court, then all subordinate courts are also martial law courts.

To understand how to properly assert your rights in a timely manner in court, the first thing you need to understand is what kind of court into which you are going. If it is a common law court (with a Citizen jury interested in justice) they will be **MUCH** more lenient on procedure and much **MORE** strict on substance. **Because you don't have any rights in martial law courts, it is fruitless to study how to assert your rights in them; - you need to avoid them like the plague!** Because all courts run by the city, county, state, and federal governments are Martial Law courts, it is essential that you not allow yourself to be charged with any type of crime. You can recognize a Martial Law court *immediately* by the flag hanging therein. If it is gold bordered or on a pole that has a spear, a ball, or an eagle, then it is a Martial Law Court. Unless you are *on active duty* in the armed forces, you must never, *never, never* allow yourself to be taken into the "bar" area of that court. Read David Miller's information on this subject. To my knowledge, the only courts in the entire nation that do *not* display the martial law, gold-fringed flag are in Camp Verde, Arizona and even *they* displayed the military flag until 1996.

Much more important than learning how to *deal* with a court is learning how to avoid any contact with law enforcement personnel in the first place. The book of Galatians has a list of positive actions against which there is no law. This is how to conduct yourself to avoid problems that lead to "*court encounters of the worst kind.*"

The day may come when someone may advocate taking the IRS to court because *they know how to control an Admiralty Court*. If this happens, do not believe them. Admiralty courts are a totally different breed of duck. Whereas civil courts are stacked in favor of the plaintiff, Admiralty courts are not. By this, I mean that no matter what a plaintiff does in a civil court, *he is not the one on trial*. Admiralty courts have a concept of *shared liability*. The judge can rule that the defendant was 75% to blame and the plaintiff was 25% to blame. The judge can even rule that the plaintiff caused all of the damage and find in favor of the defendant, even if the defendant did not file a counter-suit. We see this all the time but do not recognize it for what it is. It appears in the form of a plaintiff losing a suit and paying punitive damages to the defendant for having to defend against a frivolous suit. *No one* can control an Admiralty Law court. An Admiralty court judge even has the power to rewrite a contract if he is of the opinion that the contract gives one party an unfair advantage over the other. It is to your distinct advantage, as much as lies within you, to live peaceably with all men, to agree with your

adversary quickly lest he take you before the judge, and all the other peaceful, quiet living modes of behavior recommended in Romans, Galatians, and Philippians.

Please understand that just because I am showing you how thousands of Americans have reclaimed their Sovereignty and I am passing on a *few* bits of information on how to give yourself a fighting chance against the legal system, I am *not* offering any guarantee of absolute freedom from official or even unofficial government harassment up to and including the *martyrdom of saints*. I am quite sure that things will get worse before they get better. Many more of us will be killed. Remember Vicky Weaver and her 14-year-old son? Remember the 20 or so young people in their church/home near Waco, Texas? If it were not going to get worse, there would have been no need to include **Revelations 18:24** and **19:2** in the Bible.

Do not let yourself become paralyzed into not seeking Sovereignty merely because you are worried about running into opposition from earthly governments. Normally, we are so invisible to the bureaucrats that we will be ignored.

### SUMMARY

What I have tried to do in this chapter is let you know that in case of legal problems (like the apostle Paul) it is OK to use the *favorable* laws under which the government operates because they point out that government's obligations *to you*. Incidentally, I hope you have better luck than Paul did! Remember that Paul was put to death *in spite* of being a Roman Citizen and not having committed a capital crime. Check out the addresses in **Appendix XXII** for organizations that offer legal assistance if you feel the need for more information. In any case, you should form a local **S.C.A.R.E.** group of your own. *NEVER* go into a courtroom by yourself. There are many books about fighting the IRS and defending yourself in court, but *the safest answer is to not have to deal with them in the first place*.

---

## WHAT IS A CONTRACT?

**Contract** (*noun*) An enforceable agreement. It depends for its validity on five conditions:

1. Mutual **assent** (offer and acceptance, knowledge of the facts, meeting of the minds),
2. Legal **consideration** (usually either money or funds),
3. Legal **capacity** to contract (*sui juris*),
4. **Absence of fraud** or **duress** (knowingly, intentionally and voluntarily), and
5. Subject matter is not in violation of **common law** (you can't contract to steal or murder)

It may be argued that the Social Security Card contract is *unconscionable*, was entered into by *fraud*, and that we may void the contract by simply *disavowing* the contract and not using the number again. The stark reality is that as long as the contract is in existence, *the courts will enforce the agreement as if it were legal*. We must, therefore, discover a method whereby we may give back the Social Security obligations in a manner that *gets results!*

---

## CONSENT

We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness. That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their *just* powers from the *consent of the governed*. That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of those ends, it is the **Right**, of the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form as to them shall seem most likely to effect their Safety and Happiness. ... - **Excerpt from Paragraph 2, The unanimous Declaration of the thirteen united States of America. (a.k.a. - Declaration of Independence)** (emphasis added)

**Author's note:** It follows, then, that any power *not* derived from the **consent** of the governed is an *unjust* power. Also note, that "*the governed*" does not stipulate any specific number or percentage of the population. "*The governed*" means *you*. *Without your consent*, the government has no *just* power to do *anything* to you, without *due process of law*.

## MAJORITY RULE?

"If it be said that the *consent* of the most numerous party, in a nation, is sufficient to justify the establishment of their power over the less numerous party, it may be answered:

**"First.** That two men have no more natural right to exercise any kind of authority over one, than one has to exercise the same authority over two. A man's natural rights are his own, against the whole world; and any infringement of them is equally a crime, whether committed by one man, calling himself a robber, (or by any other name indicating his true character,) or by millions, calling themselves a government.

**"Second.** It would be absurd for the most numerous party to talk of establishing a government over the less numerous party, unless the former were also the strongest, as well as the most numerous; for it is not to be supposed that the strongest party would ever submit to the rule of the weaker party, merely because the latter were the most numerous. And as matter of fact, it is perhaps *never* that governments are established by the most numerous party. They are usually, if not always, established by the less numerous party, their *superior strength* consisting in their *superior wealth*, intelligence, and *ability to act in concert*." ...

From: *No Treason*, volume I, Lysander Spooner (1869) (some emphasis added)

---

## HOT TAX TIP!

If you are still a card-carrying "taxpayer" and you find yourself in need of some operating money, you may borrow from a friendly foreign trust or a friendly foreign corporation, giving them a promissory note for the debt. "*Loans*" are not "*taxable income*" as defined in the Infernal Revenue Code. If the foreign trust or corporation wants additional security against the debt, you may give consent for a lien against your real or personal property. If you trust your foreign contacts more than you do the IRS (who doesn't?) then you could be in a much more secure position than if actually *working* for the corporation. The IRS may not seize your property unless you have a certain percent or value in equity in that property. I am *totally* against debt. Debtors are the slaves of the lenders (Proverbs 22:7), but if you are still a "tax slave" anyway, you may find more security in being the slave of someone *other* than the IRS!

## 11 — HISTORY of BANKING and CREDIT

**QUOTE: “It is well enough that people of the nation do not understand our banking and monetary system, for if they did, I believe there would be a revolution before tomorrow morning.” – Henry Ford**

Inasmuch as the nature of banking and credit is not taught in public schools, it would be wise to include a short history in this book. Having a good understanding of debt and credit may assist someone who is sitting on the fence to decide that there is really no benefit in retaining the State Slave Number (SSN) and convince them to opt for Sovereignty. First, we will learn a little about real money. Then we will learn the difference between money and credit. Lastly, we will look at some of the major financial players and how they have played the game.

### MONEY

The earliest recorded history shows that gold and silver have been valued above any other substances on earth. Their value is based upon their unique properties among metals. Because they are quite heavy, they can easily be panned or sluiced out of gold or silver bearing placer. They have relatively low melting points allowing them to be refined under very primitive conditions. They can be either cast or beaten into virtually any shape and retain a great deal of strength. They can be beaten by hand into gold or silver leaf that is so thin as to be almost weightless, yet retaining strength and flexibility to cover clay, paper, or wooden figures with a non-porous, metal covering using an absolute minimum of material. There are medical, dental, and medicinal uses for both gold and silver. Colloidal silver can be produced for less than a dime per gallon and has proven to be effective at killing 650 kinds of virus, fungus, yeast, and bacteria with *no toxic side-effects on humans*. Colloidal gold is said to be an effective treatment for arthritis. They are also used extensively in the electronics industry. I have worked on ships whose engines had silver bearings. In *addition* to the above uses, because they are so resistant to tarnishing and so pleasing to the eye, they are extremely valuable as jewelry and ornaments.

Because gold and silver are so unique, they are often the objects of theft and have historically been given special security and protection. Today, we call the protectors of our gold and silver supply “coin shops,” “jewelry stores,” and “pawn shops.” The first bankers were the goldsmiths and silversmiths who went to great expense to protect their raw material and finished products by building very secure vaults. Because the construction of such a vault was beyond the means and/or needs of ordinary people, they either took responsibility for their own security or they would rent space in the goldsmith’s vault.

Money exchanges were simple and straightforward. If Fred Rubble had 20 ounces of silver to put in David Goldsmith’s vault, he would have David count it and weigh it. Then he would get a receipt saying, *“Fred Rubble has on deposit in David Goldsmith’s vault 20 ounces of silver as of this date, the 12<sup>th</sup> of January 1814 BC.”*

Suppose Fred wanted to buy a horse and saddle from his friend, Barney Skinflint, for five ounces of silver. Fred would go to David’s vault, withdraw 5 oz. of silver, and be issued a new receipt from David saying that he now had only 15 oz. on deposit. Fred gives the silver to Barney, saddles his horse, and rides away while Barney takes *his* 5 oz. of silver back to David Goldsmith’s vault and gets a deposit receipt for the silver. This is an honest, if cumbersome, system. Nobody could cheat.

The system was later modified and streamlined. In the new system when Fred deposited his original 20 oz. of silver, he was issued 20 *generic* receipts, one for each ounce of silver. Each warehouse receipt for silver would say something like, "*This certifies that there is on deposit in David Goldsmith's vault, one (1) ounce of silver which is payable to the bearer on demand.*" Now, when Fred wants to buy his lovely wife, Olga, a horse, Fred takes Barney five of his generic receipts for silver. Barney accepts the receipts and gives Fred the horse. Barney can keep the receipts, spend them for goods and services, or take them to David and get his five ounces of silver.

Do you think it is still a good, honest, safe system? Well, *maybe*. But we have a potential problem here. David is the only living person who knows exactly how many ounces of silver and gold are in his vault *and* how many receipts have been issued, so David has the power to manipulate the system. Some evening David may be tempted to flash some of that pretty gold from his vault to attract the attention of a pretty girl. He may print a few extra deposit receipts to buy some raw material. David might even convince himself that he can get away with it by telling himself, "*I'm sure that Fred and Barney are going to lose a few of their receipts, so the same number of receipts will still be in circulation.*" David can also be a **hard core** crook and secretly transfer all of the gold and silver out of his vault to another vault a thousand miles away and then just disappear! When he reappears at his new vault and new shop, he is known as David Rockyfellow, and lives out the rest of his days in luxury on the money he stole from the trusting people of his previous village. A modern example of this kind of bank fraud is the "Savings and Loan Scandal" involving Keating, John Glenn, Neal Bush, and too many others among the untouchables to count. Placing the government in charge of the banks only means that the government will *protect* the bankers when they commit fraud. It is less expensive for the bankers to bribe bureaucrats and politicians than it is to play fair with the public.

### CREDIT

"Credit" is the opposite of "money." In its most basic form, "credit" means "debt." If a person has money, he is rich. If a person has credit, he is broke. The reader is directed to *Black's Law Dictionary*, any good book on accounting, and to the Uniform Consumer Credit Code, section 1.301(7). "Credit" means the right granted by a *creditor* to a *debtor* to defer payment of the *debt* or to incur *more debt* and defer its payment.

The Constitution for the united States says that the government may borrow *MONEY* on the *CREDIT* of the united States. Borrowing *money* is not the same as borrowing *credit*. Money is gold or silver. Since 1913, the government has borrowed absolutely no gold or silver. They borrow *bookkeeping entries* that are called "credit." The Constitution does not allow borrowing credit on the credit of the united States, only *MONEY*. Are you getting the picture? The entire Federal Reserve Scam is an overt, unconstitutional fraud.

When a citizen goes to a bank to *ask for credit* to buy a house, he thinks that he is *borrowing money* to buy a house, right? That is what I had always thought when I talked to the bankers. Well, I was wrong. First of all, I did not borrow any money. They would not even deliver the loan in Federal Reserve Notes. The only way they would give me the credit was to make a bookkeeping entry in my savings or checking account. The actual, step-by-step procedure of getting a loan goes something like this:

The loan officer asks you to sit down and then says, "*I have to make a call. It will just take a minute.*" He dials a number, and lets it ring for a full minute and then hangs up without talking to anyone. The loan officer says, "*How much do you want to borrow on the house?*"

The citizen says, "*The total purchase price is \$120,000.00 and I have \$30,000.00 for a down payment, so I will need to borrow \$90,000.00.*"

The loan officer says, "*Are you sure that \$90,000.00 will be enough?*" (Now, didn't that make you feel good? He was offering to put you farther into debt!)

The citizen says, "*No, thank you. I will be using the furniture that I currently own and I won't have any significant moving expenses.*"

The loan officer pulls a slip of paper out from under his telephone, makes a note on it, and shoves it back under his telephone, then he says, "*That's good. Well, all we need now is for you to sign the application for a loan and a few other forms to start the process and as soon as our loan committee meets, we will let you know if you qualify. With your credit record, I can't see any problem.*"

The citizen is then guided through a large stack of papers with very fine print on which he puts his signature and the date every few pages. One of these forms has the words, "PROMISSORY NOTE" on it and, if asked what it means, the banker mumbles something about, "*This is one of the forms that have to be signed before we can start processing the loan application*" or, "*This amounts to a promise that you will pay us back*" or even, "*We use this to check your credit rating to see if your credit is strong enough to carry this size of a mortgage.*" They will say anything under the sun to get you to sign that promissory note, because they then deposit your promissory note in their bank as money, and then they authorize themselves to magically create the credit *that they extend to you*. The bank is going to **charge you** interest on **your own money!** The bank has not tied up a single dollar (or even a Federal Reserve Note) of their own in order to collect the interest on your "loan."

Even when you pay off the mortgage, the standard procedure is **not** to return the original promissory note. That promissory note will float around the world for years and be passed between international banks as collateral on various big business deals. When leaving the system, if you have ever signed a promissory note at a bank, it would be advisable to confront the banker and demand that the note be returned. If they will not give you the actual note, then demand a copy. When you get your hands on the copy, you may then accurately describe the document in your "Revocation of Signature" affidavit and revoke your signature off of the note, for fraud.

One of my "non-lawyer" teachers has told me that some of the original mortgage notes that he has managed to reclaim from banks have passed through the hands of bankers as far away as Iran. The major importance this has to the subject of Sovereignty is that, until the note is canceled, the signer of the note remains obligated on the note. The promissory note is a Negotiable Instrument, and the signer remains obligated for the amount on the note until all of the conditions are fulfilled or else it is cancelled for fraud.

### CENTRAL BANKING

Banking took a quantum leap forward in this millennium. Some time around 1000 AD an Italian banking family named Medici began loaning large amounts of money to princes and thus began the age of central banking. Some present day central banks are Lazard Brothers (France), Warburg Brothers bank and Deutchbank (Germany), House of Rothschild (world wide but concentrated in Japan, England, France, and Germany), and the two conglomerates known as the Bank of England and the Federal Reserve System.

There are less than a dozen banks making up the Bank of England and there is a separate Federal Reserve Bank for each of the Federal Reserve Regions. The Rockefellers control the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, Chase Manhattan Bank, and the Federal Reserve Bank of

Chicago. Other than the Rockefeller's banks, which are *correspondent* banks with the Bank of England but could be argued to be American owned, all other members of "The Fed" are either owned outright (wholly owned subsidiaries) or are closely held by the Bank of England. For complete information on The Fed, get the book, "*Secrets of the Federal Reserve*," by Eustace Mullins.

To fully grasp the basic concepts and goals of Central Banking, you must understand what Europe was like during the "dark ages." Until Mussolini appeared in this century, Italy (like most of the rest of Europe until around 1800) was a loosely knit collection of Principalities, which were ruled by Princes. Each Principality set its own standards and made its own laws. One peculiarity of the Principalities in Italy was that each had its own standards for width of railroad track. It was not possible to ride a single train from the north end of Italy to the south end. Transferring goods and passengers from one train to another provided work for the *paisanos* and taxes for the Prince. Mussolini is still remembered in Italy for creating one standard for the train tracks and for making the Italian trains run on time. Some Italian Principalities still exist today and raise money primarily through the sale of ornate postage stamps.

We are ready to learn about Central Banking now that we know a little more about the world in which it began. It was the practice of Medici's Bank to make a loan to a Prince and, because Princes are not usually well-schooled in fiscal responsibility, the Prince would, eventually, default on his loan. This would justify Medici's decision to *hire an army to collect the debt*. Medici's army would cut the Prince's head off, loot the treasury, and steal anything else of value that wasn't carefully hidden. Medici would then set up a new prince who would eventually need a loan and the cycle would repeat itself.

One of the Principalities going through this cycle was the Principality of Piza. At some point Medici found it imperative to hire an army to collect the debts from Piza, behead the prince, and send the Prince's treasurer into exile. The treasurer didn't like exile, so he wrote to Medici and told Medici that his bank was spending entirely too much money on debt collection. The treasurer said he knew how to cut down on Medici's overhead. He also knew that if the idea didn't work, his own "over head" would be "cut down," BUT, if the idea worked, the treasurer would like to be named as the number two man in Medici's bank. Because Medici could see that the bright young man understood the penalties for failure and the rewards for success, he gave the boy's ideas a good test. The ideas work.

The plan consisted of loaning money to more than one Prince at a time and attaching four conditions contingent on approval of the loan.

1. The Prince repays the loan, with interest.
2. The bank prints all the money for the Prince.
3. Medici has a monopoly on the Prince's business.
4. If any other Prince were to default on his loan, this Prince will use his army to collect the debt for the bank and any real estate won in the process becomes the property of the bank.

Let's examine, for a minute, how these conditions are relevant to the united States, today. Condition one is to be expected. This is the difference between a loan and a gift. 'Nuff said. Conditions two and three are the most obvious conditions imposed by The Federal Reserve. In thinking about the last condition, - America has not gone to war and planted our own flag as a symbol of ownership by conquest since the Spanish-American War. In that war, we took Cuba, Puerto Rico, the Philippines, Samoa, and a few other islands. After signing on

with the Federal Reserve System we have spent trillions of dollars on wars and only have *debt* to show for it. We actually gave Cuba and the Philippines their independence in order for the banks to make separate loans to the new governments. *Always* remember that Medici's only use for an army was to **collect debts**.

That was interesting, but let's finish up with Medici and his bank. The Medici family remained a major player in central banking for a few centuries. During this time they had so much power they even arranged to have a couple of their family members become Popes in the Vatican. A Medici donated the money to build the Sistine Chapel and hired a local whiz kid named Michelangelo to give the inside a paint job. Sad to say, because they used inbreeding as a means of maintaining control of family money, the Medicis declined in mental and physical vitality until they eventually lost control of the bank. *Medici's* bank became *Vatican* Bank. Vatican Bank became *Bank of Italy*. Bank of Italy became *Bank of California*. Bank of California became *Bank of America*. Bank of America invented the BankAmericard, which is now called a VISA card. The Bank of America is hopelessly entangled with the Bank of England.

Baron Nathan Rothschild, then the head of Rothschild's World Banking Cartel stated, "**Give me control of a nation's money and I care not who makes the laws.**" In a private meeting on June 25, 1863 (during our Civil War, fifty years before the Federal Reserve Act) in Rothschild's London Branch Bank, Nathan's descendents said, "**The few who understand the system will either be so interested in its profits, or so dependent on its favors, that there will be no opposition from that class. The great body of people, mentally incapable of comprehending the tremendous advantages, will bear its burden without complaint.**"

The Federal Reserve System was created to remove the wealth from America and Americans and transfer it to the Bank of England. Virtually all of the gold the government then had in its custody had been shipped to England by 1922. President Roosevelt issued an "Executive Order" in 1933 that was placed in all Post Offices and banks. That executive order says that all Americans **MUST** turn in their gold at the nearest bank or face massive fines and/or imprisonment. In today's inflated dollars, the fines could have been about \$175,000.00 for refusing to turn in a single twenty dollar gold piece! The gold was exchanged for Federal Reserve commercial paper (negotiable instruments). If you have an encyclopedia, look up "gold standard" or "Gold Reserve Act."

The fifth amendment to the Constitution says that private property can not be taken for public use without *just* compensation. Because gold has intrinsic value and paper has no intrinsic value, the government has used an **unjust** set of weights and measures, which the Bible says is an *abomination*. Our forefathers had prohibited precisely this kind of bank fraud in the Constitution by stipulating that the states could make no Thing (*they* capitalized it) legal tender in payment of debts other than gold or silver coin [Article 1, § 10]. The gold held by the people belonged to *them*. It did *not* belong to the government. The government had no authority to demand, threaten, intimidate, or harass Sovereigns into giving up their gold, but the government succeeded because, by 1933, Americans had been "educated" into believing they were the servants of the government and "subject to its jurisdiction." [14<sup>th</sup> amendment + Tenth Plank of the Communist Manifesto]

The **Bank of England** is a conglomerate of banks, insurance companies, and financial institutions occupying the **City of London**, an 11 square block area that is often referred to in news broadcasts as "*the heart of London's financial district.*" In truth, the City of London functions more like a separate country than it does as part of Great Britain. It has about the same

relationship to England that the Vatican has to Italy. For instance, when the Queen of England makes her annual journey to the Bank of England to renew England's loans, she is met at the gate to The City by the Lord Mayor of the City of London. She must remove her crown and kneel before the Lord Mayor before she is allowed to enter the City of London. What transpires is a demonstration of God's eternal law that *the borrower is the servant of the lender*. *The Queen is the slave of the bank*.

The American government has been under the control of British feudal Lords and/or bankers for many years. George Herbert Walker Bush is a *fourth cousin to Queen Elizabeth*. Americans first learned about this family relationship during the Queen's Royal Visit to the Colony, but George has known all of his life that he was of royal blood. George also has strong family ties to Brown Brothers Harriman Bank (Bank of England) and Kennicott Copper. The labor practices of Kennicott Copper had helped to spark the "Boxer Rebellion" in China. Did you think it was an *accident* that George was appointed as ambassador to *China*? Just what do you think *George* meant when he used the phrase "*traditional family values?*" *Feudalism?* One of George Bush's quotes which *should* be well known (but isn't), was made before the United Nations on February 1, 1992 when he said, "*It is the SACRED principles enshrined in the UN charter to which we will henceforth pledge our allegiance.*" I ask you, dear reader, what is your understanding of the word "*treason?*"

The Center for Action Monthly Newsletter for November 1992, reported that Bill Clinton's mother's maiden name was Rockefeller. Did you wonder how a used car salesman's son could afford to go to Yale? Did you ever wonder what qualifications it would take for a young governor of Arkansas to become a Bilderberger, even with the political liability of Clinton's morals? Now you know. Do you remember when Clinton talked about taxes in his first campaign? He would get his usual smirk on his face and say, "*Ah thaink ev'reh wun ottah con-TRIBUTE theyah fayah shayah.*" He knows we aren't being *taxed*. We are being *conned* into paying *tribute* money.

Al Gore would most likely be "*Lord Gore*" if he lived in England. His English cousin, Lord Ormsby-Gore, dated Jackie Kennedy before she became "Jackie O." Just like George Bush, Al Gore was raised *knowing* that he is *aristocracy*.

One of the most powerful and wealthy men in the history of planet Earth was a British imperialist named **Cecil Rhodes**. Rhodes was appointed as Ambassador to South Africa, partly as a matter of convenience because so much of it belonged to him. He was by far the biggest landholder under the British flag on the African Continent. Rhodesia was named after him because he owned most of it. He owned most of the gold that was mined in South Africa. He also owned most of the diamonds, silver, platinum, timber, cattle, slaves, lead, gemstones, and everything else. One of Cecil Rhodes' endowments was a program called "**the Rhodes Scholarship**." The purpose of the Rhodes Scholarship is to select politically viable young men of impressionable age and give them training in England that will assist in *reuniting the former British Empire*. There are more Rhodes Scholars among Bill Clinton's appointees than in any previous administration. I have no doubt that Bill Clinton, having been in the Rhodes Scholarship program himself, has the surrendering of America's National Sovereignty back to England as one of his higher priorities. His HIGHEST priority, of course, is to do it without being tried in a common law court for **treason**.

After he had been in office for about a year, President Kennedy began to see that the cause of the "national" debt is the interest charged on the *Federal Reserve Notes*. Kennedy, by executive order, began printing *United States Notes* with no interest attached. If this policy been

continued, the flow of money out of our country would have been stopped and balanced the budget. He was costing the International Bankers literally billions of dollars per year with this policy. At some point, the bankers and industrialists decided that John Kennedy and his policies had to go. Many of the books on the Kennedy assassination discuss the large number of Secret Service agents that were in Dallas on November 22, 1963 but *none* bring up the fact that there are two Secret Services. One is the president's elite guard and the other is part of the Department of the Treasury. If you can conceive of someone being killed for twenty *thousand* dollars then you can conceive of someone having a president killed for twenty *trillion* dollars. If Kennedy had not been killed, his policies would have had us totally free from the International Bankers within ten years. See: **CROSSFIRE** by Jim Marrs, page 275.

Before the United States had "The Fed" (or is it the other way around?), the government had virtually no debt and there had been virtually *no inflation* for one hundred and twenty years. A piece of unimproved land that sold for one thousand ounces of silver in 1790 would have sold for about the same price in 1910. In the generation since 1914, the District of Columbia's debt now *exceeds twenty trillion* dollars. The scheme is truly *diabolical*. The only source of "currency" for the United States is The Fed. The government prints the FRN's and then *sells* them to The Fed for the cost of paper and printing (*nominal* cost is about 3¢ per bill, but actually, it costs them *NOTHING*, because the payment is merely a bookkeeping entry). The United States then *borrowes back* the paper it printed, *at face value AND pays interest on it!* Can you understand now what the Rothschilds were talking about in 1863 and why Kennedy was killed in 1963?

If \$100 is borrowed at 5% interest and then the \$100 is paid back, where does Washington, DC get the currency to pay the interest? The answer, of course, is that they must now make a *new* loan for \$105 to maintain the \$100 in circulation *and* repay the interest. The next loan will be for even *more* interest. I am sure that you understand we are really talking about *billions* of dollars, not hundreds of dollars. Because the funds for paying the interest are never created, the people and the nation are driven ever farther into debt, until the parasite destroys its host.

Interest payments (called "service on the debt" by economists) reached the point in 1980 where the **Government Reorganization Act of 1980** said that every single penny the U. S. Government gets its hands on must go directly to the IMF to pay the interest on the debt. The government is operating 100% on borrowed money. U. S. Senator George W. Malone let the world know that he was aware of the desired result of the Federal Reserve System when he said, "... it adds up to a preconceived plan to destroy the economic and social independence of the united States."

**Counsel on Foreign Relations (CFR)** member **Newt Gingrich** was a freshman congressman in 1980 and he has never budgeted a single dollar of *tax* money in his entire career. It has all been *borrowed money*. Newt talks about a balanced budget, but he knows that he cannot balance a budget without *income*. Because Newt knows the government has no income, he also knows that all his talk about a balanced budget is a pack of lies. President Franklin D. Roosevelt wrote a letter to his good friend Col. E. Mandell House on November 21, 1933 in which he stated, "The real truth of the matter is, as you and I know, that a financial element in the large centers has owned the government of the U.S. since the days of Andrew Jackson." The CFR is based upon the philosophy expounded by E. Mandell House. I have no reason to doubt that "Mr. Newt" understands and *concurs with* the statement made by FDR.

Speaking before a selected audience made up of International Bankers and bank-controlled media representatives, David Rockefeller made the outrageous statement that, “It would have been impossible for us to develop our plan for the world if we had been subject to the bright lights of publicity during those years. But we are now prepared to march towards a world government. The super-national sovereignty of an Intellectual Elite and World Bankers is surely preferable to the national auto-determination practiced in past centuries.” For “*national auto-determination*” read “*National Sovereignty*.” David Rockefeller has been a key player in financing the overthrow of American Sovereignty.

The entire U. S. debt is owed to a special interest group that is operating what used to be the Treasury of the United States as their own, private piggy bank and they are conning the Citizens of the several States into keeping their piggy bank full. Every purchaser of **STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL** is given a copy of the Constitution for the united States. I’ll ask you to look at the Fifth Amendment. It says, in pertinent part, “... **nor shall private property** [your money and time are your property] **be taken for public use without just compensation.**” Please tell me which Citizen received “*just compensation*” when Secretary of the Treasury Robert Rubins, (ex-CEO of **Goldman-Saks Bank**), gave several billion dollars to Mexico to pay off Mexico’s debt to **Goldman-Saks Bank**?

#### SUMMARY

The purpose of this chapter was to convince everyone who is still sitting on the fence that there is no benefit in retaining the State Slave Number and thus convince them to opt for Sovereignty. There is no safety in blindly following the Bankers. The Rothschild brothers and David Rockefeller have made it very clear that the Bankers have been promoting an agenda for hundreds of years that is entirely for *their own benefit and for our harm*. In the coming chapters, you will see that there are ways in which you, *as a Sovereign*, may protect your assets and enjoy the Blessings of Liberty. There *is* security in obeying God’s laws.

---

**Adhesion contract.** Standardized contract form offered to consumers of goods and services on essentially “take it or leave it” basis without affording consumers realistic opportunity to bargain and under such conditions that consumer cannot obtain desired product or services except acquiescing in form contract. Distinctive feature of adhesion contract is that weaker party has no realistic choice as to its terms. Wheeler v. St. Joseph Hospital, Cal.App., 63 Cal.App.3d 345 Standard Oil of Calif. B. Perkins, C.A.Or., 347 F.2d 379, 383. *Not every such contract is unconscionable.* Lechmere Tire and Sales Co. v. Burwick, 360 Mass. 713, 720, 721 277 N.E.2d 503 (emphasis added)

**Unconscionable contract.** One which no sensible man not under delusion, duress, or in distress would make, and such as no honest and fair man would accept. Franklin Fire Ins. Co. v Noll, 115 Ind.App. 289, 58 N.E.2d 947,949,950 A contract the terms of which are excessively unreasonable, overreaching and one-sided.

**Impossibillium nulla obligatio est.** *There is no obligation to do impossible things.* [legal maxim] (Author’s note: I think the originator of this Maxim was thinking of the national debt.)

The above definitions are from Black’s Law Dictionary, fifth edition.

## 12 — THE TANGLED WEB OF CONTRACTS

James 5:12, Matthew 5:37

Most people are under the misconception that any statute passed by legislature having the *appearance* of law constitutes the “*law of the land.*” In 1987, an IRS agent was on TV in Las Vegas, Nevada. He said that the Internal Revenue Code was, “*the law of the land.*” **WRONG!** The IRC was not even *enacted* as law. Unless and until it *is* enacted as law, 26 USC § 7806 says that the Internal Revenue Code is “*not to be given ... any ... legal effect.*” I am having a difficult time deciding if the agent was just ignorant (*and really believes what he said*) or if he was knowingly participating in a disinformation campaign.

The Constitution is very clear in **Article VI, Paragraph 2** (the **Supremacy Clause**) that the Constitution and *only* those laws and *treaties made* which are in harmony with it are the law of the land. It is impossible for a *new* law that violates the Constitution or one of the pre-existing or treaties to be a *valid* law. *Can a law be passed requiring the registration of newborn infants with the Taxpayer ID numbers?* NO! It is not within the *enumerated powers* of the federal government to do so. *Did Congress successfully find a loophole and make registration of newborn infants with Taxpayer ID numbers the law of the land when they included it in the NAFTA and/or GATT treaties?* Again, NO. A provision like that would be *beyond their authority*. In legal language, it is an “**ultra vires**” clause. It is “**beyond the scope**” of the authority given to congress. The supreme Court has consistently held that a new treaty can not over rule the existing Constitution and treaties.

So, congress is filled with a bunch of treasonous vipers. What else is new? Because most Senators and Representatives are lawyers, that observation has been the consensus for years. Are we supposed to *tremble in fear* or are we to *rejoice*? I, like other Sovereigns, will *rejoice!* Because the bankers knew that they could pass no law that could make it through the challenges and exposure it would get in the courts, they put us into slavery under contracts, with our own consent. Because they promoted the registration of adults under fraudulent pretexts and the treaty clauses requiring registration of infants are *ultra vires* and therefore null and void, we may rejoice. The contract, and therefore the slavery, may be vacated for fraud.

Do you remember the story in **Matthew, Chapter 17** where Peter formed a verbal contract requiring Jesus and himself to pay taxes? Do you remember that telling a court your name forms a contract with the court, which gives them authority to jail you for contempt, slap you with a big fine, or do anything else they wish? When you look at the definition of a contract, you see that it does not make any difference whether the “*mutual assent*” is written or spoken. When you give your name *or* your word, you create a contract.

In **James 5:12** and **Matthew 5:37** we are told to be very careful with giving our word. We can see how strongly Jesus felt about keeping your word when he provided the money for Peter’s tax contract by working a miracle. If we have contracted to be a cosigner on the District of Columbia’s debt, God wants us to fulfill the contract. If we can legally break the contract for cause, God would prefer that we break the contract and come back into His jurisdiction.

### EFFECT OF PURCHASING WITH LAWFUL MONEY

When you rent a car from AVIS you may drive it, but you do not own it. You have *none* of the rights that are exclusive to ownership. For instance, if you had rented a compact and decide you want to move up to a luxury car, you would have to go back to AVIS and rent a

different car. You would be in deep trouble if you traded the AVIS compact in at the Cadillac dealer for a nice limo. If you found a car dealer who *would* make the trade, AVIS would haul you in front of a judge. Guess who would be the new owner of the Caddy? Right first time! AVIS would own a Cadillac. This is an easily understood example of another truth. ***You can not become the owner of a thing by trading something for it that you do not own.***

Federal Reserve Notes (FRN's) are owned by the Federal Reserve Banks and loaned or rented to the U. S. Government as evidence of debt. You do not own the FRN's in your pocket. If you "pay" for a new Cadillac with a paper sack full of FRN's and then some bureaucrat decides you need to contribute that car as your share of the national debt, guess who gets the car? Right again. The Federal Reserve bankers will own another Cadillac.

Although, I have never seen this particular presumption exposed in court yet, a very similar argument was presented during closing arguments in the matter of **U. S. v. Austin G. Cooper, 89-109-CR-HOEVELER, USDC SO OF FLA.** In that matter, the U.S. Attorney argued that the mere act of depositing an envelope in a mailbox obligated a person to pay off the national debt. Because the Postal Service is "private" now, and owned by the International Monetary Fund, any use of this former governmental service obligates that person for the entire debt to the IMF. The remedy, of course, is to write "*under duress*" or "*without recourse*" in the lower left hand corner of every letter you mail. Doing so reserves your common law remedies.

Since it is just a matter of time until the use of "rented" FRN's is used as an argument to confiscate personal property; we can begin protecting ourselves *now* by paying for every major item with lawful money; i.e., gold or silver coin. When I bought my Ford Diesel Pickup, the receipt read, "... for \$21.00 in U. S. Silver Dollars plus other consideration in the form of corporate notes of undetermined value." The "corporate notes" were the FRN's. The only *significant* portion of the payment was the 21 silver dollars. My rights to a common law remedy were thereby Constitutionally assured. In order for the IRS to attempt to lay claim to my truck, they would now have to use common law. **Erie Rail Road v. Tompkins** did away with Federal Common Law back in 1937, so the IRS has no remedy at law in federal courts whereby they may take my truck. Until I became a Sovereign it did not make any difference because all they had to do was exercise their rights and remedies under contract and consent.

It is very important to learn how to use your protection under common law to your advantage. The technique of using 21 silver dollars can often make you the winning bidder at a "cash only" tax sale auction for real estate if the other bidders attempt to pay with checks. And again, since you gave real money for the land, your common law remedies were preserved. If you live near a county courthouse, you could turn a few hundred silver dollars into a few million Federal Reserve Notes in pretty short order! It has been done!

#### WHAT ARE TRUSTS?

Because our remedy for the Social Security contract is founded upon **releasing** ourselves from a **Power of Appointment**, a bit of general information about **Trusts** (and how to void them) is in order here. A **Power of Appointment** is a situation in which one person is appointed as Trustee, guardian, or given power of attorney over another person or his property. All that most people need to know about a TRUST is that it is a special kind of a contract.

To help us understand how *powerful* a Trust is as a business tool, let us remember that the International Bankers use **Common Law Trust #62** in Puerto Rico as the parent for the IRS and that the Federal Reserve System uses the **Depository Trust Company** as a holding company for all of the stocks and bonds traded on Wall Street. All of the Stocks and bonds are *owned* by the **DTC** and the people who trade on the stock exchange are merely swapping

markers. (Because your stocks and bonds are *already* owned and in the custody of the FRB, all they have to do to leave you penniless is to claim them as payment on your share of the national debt.) The DTC and Common Law Trust #62 are virtually untouchable. If you use a properly drawn-up Trust to protect *your* wealth, then *your* wealth will be *just as untouchable*.

In a **Trust**, someone places his or her life, liberty, or property in the **TRUST** of another person. There must be an *element* of trust or there can be no **TRUST**. The best reason to void a **trust** is because the **trustee** has done something to violate his **trust** or to cause the **trustor** not to **trust** the **trustee** any more. If the **trustee** turns out to be incompetent, untrustworthy, has a conflict of interest, or shows evidence of fraud, then the **trustee** may be removed and/or the **Trust** (contract) may be vacated. Are you getting the picture? *If you don't trust the government to look out for your affairs, then you are perfectly within your rights to revoke any and all powers of appointment you have given them over your own signature.*

**Article 1, § 8** of the **Washington State Constitution** prohibits the State from forming any irrevocable trusts. I have included this in Appendix VI, page 135, in the example for revoking the DMV trust over automobiles. If your state Constitution *has* such a provision, then use it in your affidavit. If your state *does not* have such a provision, then use the provision that states that all political power comes from or resides in the People. If you are ready to stand on your own two feet as a Sovereign, you will discover a satisfactory way to word a replacement sentence for your affidavit. Take your time. Be sure you understand what you are doing. Do it right and you can look forward to the rest of your life as a free Sovereign.

Because various elements of **fraud** are involved in causing you to have to revoke these powers of appointment, you should be familiar with what fraud is, does, and causes. Look up **fraud** in *Black's* and look up every reference that *Black's* makes to laws, decisions, and jurisprudence. Look up all the court cases and *read them*. Look up "fraud" in *American Jurisprudence*, 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition. *Essentially*, fraud is when one person knowingly induces another person to rely upon their word, action, or silence, to the other's harm. Court decisions have established that fraud vitiates (nullifies) *everything*. Fraud vitiates **contracts** and even *court judgments*. This definition is a digest of *two pages* from *Black's*. Whenever you allege fraud in an affidavit, you can use the affidavit to vacate a Trust or any other form of contract.

Be sure that you understand how and why we have worded the examples as we have. When we word our **Affidavit - Release of Appointment** in the manner we do, it is *not* because we have any *emotional bias* against the lying, cheating, thieving, treasonous, slothful, incompetent, nincompoops who are acting as stooges of the International Bankers and infesting *our* public offices. The reason we word the affidavits this way is because these are the reasons we may legally dissolve a contract. Try to keep emotion out of it and just stick to the facts. I hope most people find this easier than I do!

At one point in my research, I had the opportunity to discuss the IRS (in a friendly fashion) with a very high-ranking Secret Service (Treasury) agent. One of the things he told me was, "*Where they* (the IRS) *really get their hooks into you is when you sign your first 1040 form.*" This is straight from a Treasury Agent's mouth, folks, *so listen up!* **THEY** know that what you have signed is of *ultimate importance*, and part of *their job* is to make you think it is *not* important.

If you have a copy of the last voluntary self-assessment form 1040 that you signed, dig it out of the file cabinet and take a close look at the area around your signature. The first thing to look at is the perjury statement that is written immediately *above* your signature. Read the perjury statement carefully and then turn to **28 USC 1746** and you will see that you have

declared, under penalty of perjury, that you are signing this document from within Washington, DC or a territory of Washington, DC. Next, look immediately to the left of your signature and you will see the word "LABEL" in all capital letters. You will also see instructions to affix the *mailing* label that the IRS was thoughtful enough to provide for you. The word "label" is used twice. *Why?* Now, look in Black's Law Dictionary for the definition of the word "label". You will find that the adhesive-backed paper with your address is only *one* type of label. You will also find that a label is an attachment or codicil on you God-given rights. Do you understand now why the word "label" was used twice?

When you sign a Form 1040, you are declaring, under penalty of perjury, that you are knowingly signing a codicil on your rights and doing so within the jurisdiction of Washington, DC. Any sane person is presumed to know, understand, and concur with the content of any instrument bearing his voluntary signature. The only way to make those 1040 forms of no legal effect is to *revoke your signature* from the 1040's and to void your Social Security Contract. Fortunately, because of mistake and fraud, these are not difficult to do.

### CONTRACTUAL EFFECTS OF ASSOCIATIONS

An officer in any corporation (*other* than a Corporation Sole in *most* states) is under a **legal disability** because of his *obligations* to the state-created entity. There are specific references in the Internal Revenue Code (IRC) to *officers in corporations*. A board member or officer in a non-profit, 501-C corporation (like [as if it were] a church) is under *exactly* the same legal disability. If you are a member of the board of a tax-exempt church and wish to become Sovereign, you must first terminate the legal disability.

Disassociating one's person and family from a Church or civic group is often an emotionally trying change. The decision must be made, however, because the contracts (articles of incorporation) are binding on the officers and the corporation is the created servant of the state. I have retained *membership* in only one organization that *may* be incorporated. I am not an officer at this time or planning to be in the future. I am safe because I have only found where the IRC mentions *officers* in corporations and I *do* have the first Amendment right to peacefully assemble.

### LICENSE = PERMISSION

The word "license" means "*permission to do that which would otherwise be unlawful.*" The very the act of *applying* for a driver's *license* tells the government that *you* believe (for reasons that need to be known only to yourself) it is *not lawful* for you to use the public thoroughfares while exercising your rights as a free person to travel freely and unencumbered. Because *you* signed the consent form (application), then *you* created the presumption that *you* are under some kind of legal disability, and it can now be safely presumed by every police officer and judge that you have no right to travel under any conditions other than those stipulated by the licenser (the government). George Orwell was a prophet, of sorts, when he described "doublespeak" in his book "*1984.*" Right there in my Webster's encyclopedia, after describing license as being "permission," it notes that license is synonymous with "freedom." Doublespeak is when freedom requires permission and credit means money.

In the movie "WITH HONORS," Joe Pesci says that the genius of the Constitution is that it can be changed. NOT SO, FOLKS! The genius of the Constitution lies in the words, "*We, the People of the united States ....*" The People created the Constitution and the Constitution created the government. The first universal principle we cited in this book is that *the creature owes its servitude to the creator.* The government owes its servitude to the Constitution and the Constitution is there to protect and to serve US. What kind of an upside-

down view of the world do we have when we go to *the servant of our servant* to request *license* to do what we already have a God given right to do? Once we sign *any* application for a license, we create the presumption that we are under legal disability, the state is our master, and we are the slaves. When the state then begins to treat us like slaves, it is *only* because we have given them *written authorization* to do so.

If I owned a large ranch and had a fishpond, I would be within my rights to control who caught fish in my pond. I could catch as many fish as I wanted. If I hired a ranch hand to assist with the work and told him not to fish in the pond, that would also be my right. The example of asking permission from my servant, the state, to use a public thoroughfare built with my fuel tax dollars is roughly the same as asking permission from my ranch hand for *permission* to catch fish in my own pond, paying a tax for the privilege, and *paying fines to my ranch hand* when he catches me fishing in *my* pond without *his permission* (license).

If you have a discussion with a mobile revenue collector (highway patrolman) about whether or not you need a license to use the thoroughfares and he *insists* it is not a contract or a consent form and the state has a right to *require* licenses, you might remind him of how the controversy over the “**whiz quiz**” was settled. When states began requiring urine tests for drugs on automobile drivers, the issue went straight to court and was struck down. NO TESTING! A short time later, a *specific waver of rights* to allow testing for drugs was added to the application for your driver’s license. Now they may test and there are penalties if you refuse. All of their power to control you has come from *your own authorization*, on an **instrument that bears your signature**. Are you convinced yet that YOU have the power to break the contracts and be free?

Incidentally, the time to have this kind of discussion with a policeman is in a doughnut shop, because if he is out on the street he will be in an entirely different mindset. If he stops you (and you *are* a Sovereign), usually all you have to do is show him your identification and bill of sale on the car and let him call it in to the dispatcher. If he gives you the choice between signing the ticket or going directly to jail, then write “*non assumpsit*” above your name and be sure that some of your signature loops up onto it (so they cannot erase it). *Non assumpsit* means that you *are* accepting the paper but *not* accepting any of their contractual offers. It is the closest thing I know to legally giving your name *without* legally giving your name. A speeding ticket is a commercial contract, therefore you may even sign it *without* the reservation of rights, as long as you file the contract cancellation notice within the time specified by law.

If you have learned how to become a Sovereign, then a little contractual offer such as a “speeding ticket” is not going to worry you. As a Sovereign, you are well aware you have a stronger right NOT to sign the policeman’s contract than he has to offer it to you. You certainly know that if a policeman *threatens* to take you to jail for not signing a ticket, that contract (ticket) is not enforceable because a contract is only valid if entered into intelligently, knowingly, and *voluntarily*.

If you never sign an application for a license then you never create the *presumption* of legal disability. If you have signed an application and merely allowed the license to expire, the presumption of legal disability *may* remain attached. We will learn how to deal with that later.

A friend of the author operated a licensed, but over-powered, radio transmitter in California. Operating a station *above its licensed wattage* amounts to the same thing as *operating without a license*. My friend was harassed and threatened with thousands of dollars in fines by the Federal Communications Commission (FCC). Notices of the fines were sent on very official looking forms and cited all kinds of official-looking laws, rules, and regulations. The FCC begged the operator to make a token gesture of paying twenty-five dollars (*over*

twenty dollars – 7<sup>th</sup> amendment), promising that if he paid it all would be forgiven. These dire warnings were ignored and the contractual offers were politely refused. I will submit that if he had paid the token fine, he would also have been required to sign a release. That document would have created the presumption that he had no right to use a radio transmitter *at all* without obeying all federal guidelines. Because the presumptions would have thereafter been against him, he could have been fined and/or jailed for doing the things he does freely today.

Finally, a Navy officer accompanied by two, armed guards drove up to his house in a big sedan. From the looks of them, their intent was to either shut my friend down or take him away. The officer was told that if there were no search warrants or arrest warrants then they had better leave immediately. They left and my friend was not bothered again. *He* believes to this day that his Constitutionally recognized rights to free speech and press protected him. I believe they were afraid to have the matter come up in court because they would have to expose the contract in a high profile case.

Do you understand how the State is given the permission to regulate us by our own hand? If it is not clear yet, I will give you some more examples, because before you make your *strategic withdrawal*, you must understand why you have the *right* to withdraw. You must also understand why the government *must* accept your decision to withdraw and why the government has *no power* to prevent you from withdrawing.

#### MARRIAGE LICENSE

In applying for a marriage license, you are doing exactly the same thing as two slaves who approach the plantation owner and request permission to mate. Also, like slaves, any offspring would be born as slaves and would be the property of the same plantation owner. Have you wondered under who's authority your child is issued a State Slave Number (SSN) at birth? Under *your* authority, of course! By signing an application for a marriage license, you have made the government a partner and co-owner of everything produced by the marriage, *including the offspring*.

Have you wondered why the state presumes to have authority to refuse to allow you to transport your newly-delivered infant home from the hospital unless you put the baby in an infant restraining seat? Don't wonder any more. The state is merely looking after the security of its investment.

A marriage license may be viewed as a three-way partnership agreement (contract) which is made between the husband, the wife, and the state. In a business partnership, all of the partners own all of the business. The partners share the risk and they share ownership of all that is produced. When a partnership is dissolved, the mutual holdings are split up between the partners. Estate taxes average about one-third of the estate value because the marriage license created the presumption that the government is one-third owner of the partnership. When one of the couple dies, the government is, in effect, turning to the surviving spouse and saying, "*Due to the death of one of the partners, it is time to dissolve the partnership. You will buy me out.*" When the number of partners in any professional partnership is reduced, some of the partners will usually need to borrow money to cover the cost. The IRS considers it normal business procedure for a widow to need a bank loan to cover the cost (pay the estate tax). They don't feel a bit sorry for the widow. Why should they? No one held a gun to anyone's head and forced either of them to sign the marriage *license*. Didn't they authorize the government (their master) to treat them this way?

Open your Black's Law Dictionary and look at "Marriage License." A marriage license is: "A license or permission granted by public authority to persons who intend to *intermarry*, ..."

When we turn to "*intermarriage*" all that it says is "See: **miscegenation.**" Under "**Miscegenation**" we see: "*Mixture of races; marriage between persons of different races, as between a white person and a Negro.*" When one voluntarily applies for a license, one creates *presumptions*. One of the presumptions created by application for a marriage license is that the applicants are intending a inter-racial marriage. If your marriage is not one of mixed marriage, then a marriage license is not appropriate, applicable, or required. This is an excellent reason for voiding the marriage license. What will the neighbors think? You don't have to tell them! Are you going to be "living in sin?" No, but you *had* been living under a false assumption that a license (permission) was required in the first place.

#### AUTO LICENSE

A common joke about contracts is that, "*The large print giveth and the small print taketh away.*" This is never more true than when you go to buy an automobile from a new or used car dealer. The true title to any automobile is the **Manufacturer's Certificate (or Statement) of Origin**. As surely as the holder of the allodial title is the owner of real estate, the holder of the best title owns the car. When you bought your car, the dealer took you to a desk and talked about everything under the sun up to the point where he slid a piece of paper across the desk and said, "Sign this form here and here, where the X's are, and we'll send this off to the state DMV. You'll get your license plate, title, and registration in about three weeks." You looked to see if the price he wrote down was the same as you had agreed to and then you signed the form. You just agreed to:

1. pay for the car;
2. *donate* the car to a TRUST known as your State's DMV;
3. Accept a *certificate of beneficial interest* for the donated auto, called a "*registration*";
4. Accept a "**Certificate of Title.**" (Notice how the Title Number is carefully blocked off? The "**Certificate**" is definitely not a Title, it merely *certifies* that there *is* a Title, *somewhere.*);
5. Because the State-Owned Trust is now the *legal owner* of the automobile, they have the lawful right to set the qualifications for and to license any operators of *their* equipment and delineate the parameters for its use (stop at stop signs in the middle of nowhere, etc.)

Although the *right* of a free person to travel freely and unencumbered was recognized by the supreme Court in **Kent v. Dulles, 357 U.S. 116, 125**, and although no government agency may convert a secured *right* into a privilege and require a license or charge a fee for the exercise of the *right* was recognized by the supreme Court in their ruling in **Murdock v. Pennsylvania, 319 U.S. 105**, *by signing your name*, you have entered the world of *contracts* and have *given up your rights*.

If you borrowed my Skilsaw, would I not have every right to tell you not to leave it outside in the dew and dust all night? Of course I would. It is my saw and I have every right to look out for its maintenance. The same rights are invoked when you are allowed to use *the State's car*. The state has every right to monitor the condition and regulate the use of **their** car whether it is on a public thoroughfare or in your locked garage.

If something belongs to you, you have the right to keep it, use it, give it away, or sell it. American Law recognizes our Sovereign rights to life, liberty, and property. **American Law also recognizes your right to give away or sell these same rights.** Before you can understand the responsibility of Sovereignty, you must understand that you have as much legal right to give away or sell your rights to own property (real OR personal) as you have to give away or sell your rights to free speech and press in the non-disclosure clause of an employment contract. In

church, we used the terms “free will” and “free moral agent.”

When you want to buy something from someone, that person either has the right to sell the product to you or he does not. Very simple. When you go to Sears to buy a refrigerator, they give you a bill of sale (Title) that proves that the refrigerator is yours. Why is it, then, that we have allowed ourselves to believe that the Ford dealer *cannot* give us a good ownership paper for his car? We don't take the refrigerator to the state and buy an annual license and title for it, so why should we believe that we need to apply to the state for a title for other personal property?

Because I have not seen copies of all versions of the contract forms used to transfer custody of automobiles, I cannot tell you exactly how the contract was worded that give *your* car to the state Trust. If you wish to find out for yourself, you might start by looking at identification of parties. Start by looking for the words “Grantor” and “Donor.” Because the wording will not be plain, and most of the conditions of contract will not be in the papers you signed, you have a situation of “void for vagueness” and “fraud in the inducement.” By invoking the statutes of frauds, you can break any fraudulent contract.

### THE SOCIAL SECURITY INSTRUMENT

The Social Security System began as a State project for the purpose of assisting the United States (the *federal corporation* also known as Washington, DC) to overcome its condition of bankruptcy as declared by executive order on March 7, 1933 and passed by Congress two days later, without debate or modification, as the “Banking Relief Act of March 9, 1933.” Although it would have obviously been illegal (not one of the enumerated powers) for the federal government to initiate the Social Security Ponzi scheme, the federal government misused its power to regulate commerce between the states by immediately taking control of the program. This was the obvious intent from the start.

I wish some Citizen with time and access would find out exactly how Social Security was orchestrated. The history of the SSA is plain enough after Indiana began the program, but *who were the major players before that time? Where did they meet? Was this “high-tech form of slavery” discussed concurrent with planning the Federal Reserve System?* In planning how to put the government into debt, it seems logical to me that they would also be planning how to get the Citizens to accept slavery. *Is this what was being discussed by the Rothschild brothers in 1863?* This subject interests me because there are loose ends. I do not like loose ends. It was obvious in **Genesis 47** that Joseph and the Pharaoh began planning the enslavement of Egypt from the day of the dream interpretation. It is obvious that the Social Security Scheme could not have been invented in such a complete form in such a short time after the bankruptcy. I am curious, but that kind of knowledge is not necessary in order to understand how to break the fraudulent contract with Social Security.

**Ecclesiastes 3:13** says **your labor is given to you as a gift from God**. This means your labor belongs to *you*, not the government. Also, read **Deuteronomy 8:18**. *Can we give our labor as a gift or sell our labor through contract, to the quasi-government agency known as the Social Security Administration?* We sure can. And once they own our labor, *what do we think we are going to exchange of our own to buy our labor back? Where does your money come from if your labor is not your own? Pretty scary, isn't it?* Well, at least as far as Social Security is concerned, the future is not as bleak as it could be. We can easily revoke the power of appointment of the Social Security Administration *for cause*, and the cause is **fraud**.

We became *instrumentalities of the United States* when we signed the SS-5 form. Signing the form did many things and created many presumptions. It creates a type of **Power of**

**Appointment** allowing the government to make decisions for us regarding our lifestyle in our old age. The SSN is our *cosigner number* on the national debt. Because the SSN is also the "Taxpayer Identification Number," if we have no SSN, we are not a "Taxpayer." If we are not a "Taxpayer," we are not a "*person required to file*" a form 1040 as stated in the instruction book for filing the 1040. Incidentally, the tax code only deals with "taxpayers," not "non-taxpayers."

When the government accepts our SS-5 application and issues a Social Security Card, the government becomes potentially liable for future disability or retirement benefits. In *exchange* for those potential benefits, we owe the government *everything*. As in the example of contracting away free speech, for as long as we remain eligible for any Social Security benefit, we remain liable for all of our side of the contract. When we sign an insurance policy, the mere *potential* for a claim incurs an obligation for premiums. Also (thank God), when we are *not* potentially eligible for benefits, we are *not* liable for premiums.

As with the **Genesis 47** example where the Pharaoh could dictate the division of the harvest, so it is with the Social Security Administration, who now *owns* our labor, and has the right to divide up the fruits of that labor. The best evidence that it all belongs to the SSA is that the SSA has the right to divide our paycheck. Remember the universal principle, **ONLY the owner of the pie has the right to divide the pie?** The principle is equally true if restated as, "*The divider of the pie must be the owner.*" In mathematics,  $1+1=2$ . It is equally true when stated,  $2=1+1$ . If you measure a yardstick, it does not matter which end you measure from because either way it will be 36 inches long. Because the government is *dividing* the fruits of your labors, then the government *must* be the owner of *all* your labor. Any doubt left?

#### DEALING WITH BANKS / IRS

The U. S. Constitution specifically prohibits "**bills of attainder.**" A simplified definition of "bill of attainder" is when a "law" is passed authorizing forfeiture of property or a fine based solely upon the decision of a bureaucrat. A bill of attainder does not require a common law court and jury to decide whether or not there is sufficient evidence or justification for applying the law to you. Perhaps the best example of a bill of attainder is a parking ticket.

Many people have expressed outrage that the IRS could loot their bank accounts, lien their property, and garnish their wages without having obtained a court order to authorize it. They have argued in court that such a taking of property without a court order constitutes a bill of attainder and is a violation of the secured right to due process. The following information will show you why we will *always* lose that argument until we learn how *Sovereigns* deal with banks. We will look at the usual process of opening a bank account. We will look at the IRS Code and some CFR's. When we are finished, we will understand what it all means.

Do you remember that when you opened your checking or savings account, you were required to sign a "**signature card?**" A signature card is a legal contract. It has an agreement to perform, a date, and a signature - *your* signature. Remember the presumption that "*any sane person is presumed to know and concur with the content of any instrument that bears their voluntary signature?*" When you signed the signature card, you consented to abide by the rules of the bank. Some cards even have "*the rules of (the bank) and the Federal Reserve System.*" Have you ever read the rules of the bank? Of course not! They would fill a three-bedroom house. If you *did* read the rules of the bank, you would discover that you are obligated to abide by "**administrative rules** of the Department of the Treasury." By signing a 5" x 8" card, you have consented to abide by all present and future *administrative rules* (not *laws*) of the Department of the Treasury.

There are a few things that people should know about the workings of **Title 26 U. S.**

Code (26 USC) Internal Revenue Code, **Title 26 Code of Federal Regulations** (26 CFR) "Treasury Regulations," and **27 CFR** "Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, and Firearms Regulations."

There are **50 Titles** of U. S. Codes. If your law library is not big enough to have a hard cover edition of the USC's, it may be advantageous to go to a big city library that has a set. On the flyleaf inside the front cover of the hard cover USC's, there is a list of all 50 Titles and *some* of those Titles (about 22) are marked with an **asterisk (\*)**. The footnote says that the *marked* Titles have been enacted as **positive law**. You will notice that **Title 26** (the Internal Revenue Code) **is not marked**. *The Internal Revenue Code is not law*. It never has been law and most likely never will be law. **26 USC § 7806** says, in typical bureaucratic doublespeak, that **NO PART** of 26 USC will have any *legal* effect. Does this mean that it is a big waste of time? No, it doesn't. We find in **26 USC § 7805** that the way the **Internal Revenue CODE** is **enforced** is through *regulations* promulgated by the Secretary of the Treasury (in **26 CFR** and **27 CFR**). One easy way to understand this is, when enacting **26 USC**, Congress made binding rules upon the Treasury Department and *some* of these rules *authorized* regulations to be made by bureaucrats which would become *enforceable laws*. **26 USC** definitely is *not* enforceable on the public and portions of **26 CFR** *might* be enforceable on the public. The IRS "NOTICE of Levy" *incorrectly* cites a portion of **26 USC § 6331** as authorizing levy on wages. This is because the IRS treats their own employees like mushrooms. They feed them a lot of compost and keep them in the dark.

**26 CFR Part 1** contains **final income tax regulations**. Part 1 contains *nothing* that authorizes collection by levy and distraint (force). You will find collection by levy and distraint in **Title 27 CFR**, Bureau of Booze, Smokes, and Guns (BATF) **Part 50**. Oh, - I guess I had better mention that there *is* a *cross-reference* to the BATF regulation found in **26 CFR Part 301, Administrative Rules**. **26 CFR Part 301** contains the *administrative rules* to follow when using enforced collection for **BATF** taxes. Isn't this foolish? **BATF** taxes are paid by **stamp!** They are paid *in advance or concurrent* with manufacture, *by the manufacturer*. There is no opportunity for a manufacturer to get behind on the taxes. Enforced collection situations *never* come up. The only apparent reason for an entry under **Administrative Rules** for collection of taxes under **26 USC § 6331** is to allow enforced collection of **NON-BATF** taxes under your bank's "**signature card**" contract!

I could take up lots of your time with page after page of evidence to prove that all levies and liens are done under **BATF** authority, but it would be a big waste of time. Although we *do* need to understand how the IRS became so powerful, we do not need to get smarter in how to *deal* with the IRS. We need to get smarter in how **NOT** to deal with the IRS. Do you understand now how the IRS has had *your permission* to do what it has done? Do you understand that all you need to do to stop them from taking your earnings and property is to take away their permission? Do you now understand that the way to do this is to give back the potential benefits and revoke the Social Security contract for fraud? Are you still not convinced that the procedure recommended in this book is 100% based on solid legal procedure? Well, the following bit of information should end any future confusion on the subject.

One of the books that I picked up during my "*disobedient slave*" phase was the "**IRS Handbook for Special Agents**." In their own handbook, the agents are directed to prepare a case for prosecution in court by visiting all banks in the area and picking up all of the *signature cards* signed by the taxpayer. The agents then file the signature cards as **exhibits** attached to an affidavit accompanying the COMPLAINT. Because federal judges are given special training in tax procedure, the judge now knows that you have agreed to procedure under *Administrative*

*Rules* and the judge then enforces your voluntary contract. He gives the IRS whatever it wants. The judge takes his share. You get what is left. Don't complain *now*. **You** should have read the contract better. Remember that a person is presumed to understand and concur with that which **bears his signature**. The small size of the bank signature card sure fooled you about its importance, didn't it?

### WHAT IS A PERSON?

The word "person" has several definitions. It can mean a natural born, human person. It can also mean a corporate or state-created person. Look in the Rules of Civil Procedure on how to serve a Summons and Complaint. There are many kinds of persons. It is important to understand what kind of "person" you are dealing with because you have to know *who created that person* and *to whom that person owes his servitude*. A corporation is a state-created entity that owes its servitude to the state.

When a group of Friends meet for religious fellowship, they are concurrently exercising the first amendment rights of peaceable assembly and the right of immunity from state-established religion. There is a great temptation, nowadays, for a congregation to form a non-profit corporation so they can give tax receipt to their members for filing along with their income tax forms. A non-profit corporation is a state-created person owing its servitude to the government. In order to dispense these government benefits (tax receipts) the leadership of the church has to turn their backs on God because by incorporating with the state, the church now owes its allegiance *to* the state. When they petition the IRS for tax exempt status, they are *not* claiming to be a church. Under IRS rules, churches are *already* exempt from filing.

If you are an officer in a corporation then you are under a **legal disability** due to the obligations you have accepted under the charter of the corporation. If you are a board member or officer in an incorporated church, you are under the very same obligation to the state due to your **legal disability**. You may *attend* an incorporated church as a *non-member* and incur no obligations under law, but because it would place you under a constant emotional strain (and it is a bad example for your children), it may not be in your best interest. If you are currently an officer or board member then you cannot claim Sovereignty due to your legal disability. You have to make up your mind. Is the *prestige* of being an officer in the church more important than being free to worship God? Remember that you cannot serve both. *Any incorporated church* is the house of (belonging to) the "small g" god called government. It *cannot* be the house of God at the same time. If you are seeking Sovereignty and your true desire is to serve God and receive HIS benefits, you will be happy to know that there are some very pleasant alternatives to non-profit corporations that masquerade as houses of God.

A hundred years ago virtually all Christian churches were unincorporated. Virtually all Christian churches taught that a professional abortionist was a murderer of the unborn (**Deuteronomy 27:25**). They taught that friendship with the world is enmity with God (**James 4:4**). They taught that those who do abominable things will never enter heaven (**Revelations 21:27**). They taught that homosexuality was an abomination (**Leviticus 18:22, Deuteronomy 22:5, Deuteronomy 23:17**). What a great difference there is between what was taught then and what is taught now! If an incorporated church and/or "mass media ministry" takes a strong, vocal stand against acts condemned in the Bible, yet condoned and/or promoted by the government, that church will have their tax exempt status "reviewed" because of political activity. I watched **Jerry Falwell** retract a statement he had made after the government made public threats regarding his tax-exempt status. I imagine that most Americans know more about this kind of thing than I do, because I watch very little television

The larger and more wealthy an incorporated church becomes, the more easily its message can be controlled by its creator, the state. If the incorporated church refuses to do the will of its creator, it will suffer just like any other disobedient slave ought to suffer. There are many, high-profile “*mass media ministers*” who claim to be conservative, fundamentalist, Bible-believing preachers who weep and moan about loss of religious freedom while at the same time soliciting donations for which they offer *tax receipts*. I will submit that *there is no loss of freedom of religion*. God gave those ministers **freedom of choice** along with all the rest of mankind. If they have used their freedom of choice to select the government as the creator and “small g” god of their organization, then *they must also accept the rights of the creator of their corporation*.

In making a choice, we are bound to accept the results of that choice, be they pleasant or unpleasant. If I choose to drive 80 miles per hour on an unfamiliar road, in the rain, at night, and then miss a curve and have a bad crash, it is the result of the choices I have made. I cannot very well opt for different results while I am sliding off the road, can I? My *only* option at crash time is to ride out the crash. If I have made the decision to wear a crash helmet, a seat belt, and a shoulder harness, then those good choices may soften the harmful effects of some of my bad choices. It is the same way in every other aspect of making a choice. I do not feel very sorry for the mass media ministers who measure their money in millions and cry about loss of freedom of religion. Those “ministers” have made their choices and they will reap their rewards.

#### THE REAL ESTATE TAX AFFIDAVIT

I have bought and sold several pieces of real estate in my lifetime. By the time I sold my last piece of land (it was in Washington State), I had learned a thing or two about contracts, Trusts, and Sovereignty. One of the documents required to be filed in a Washington real estate transaction is a “**Tax Affidavit**.” At the top of the form, I was identified as the “**seller/grantor**” and the other party was called the “**buyer/ grantee**.” At the bottom of the page, however, we were called the “**grantor/agent**” and the “**grantee/agent**.” Grantor and Grantee are terms used in Trusts. At the top of the form, I could either be the **seller** (*the actual owner*) or I could be transferring the property for a Trust. At the bottom of the page, I was either the **Grantor** (*the trust, itself*) or an **agent** for the Trust. **I could not be the seller**, because I could not sell the land unless I *owned* the land. Title to the land had been held *in trust* by a government agency, therefore, it was *not mine to sell*. Using the tax affidavit form that the government provided, it was not possible to transfer land without declaring under penalty of perjury (10 years in prison) that I was **acting as an agent for a trust, either as grantor or grantee**.

The **grantee/agent** was, in effect, declaring under penalty of perjury that *he knew* that he was **NOT** going to *actually own the land*. He would pay annual rents (real estate taxes) on the land for the privilege of using it. If at any time he failed to pay his annual rents (taxes), he could be evicted by the real owner, the government. These are the same papers I had signed when I had become the “*owner*” of the property, not realizing that I was under absolutely no obligation to sign those papers.

The first Plank of the Communist Manifesto calls for the abolition of all privately owned property and for all rents accruing on property to accrue to the government. As you can see, if you are paying annual “rents” in the form of real estate tax, you are already one-tenth of the way to being a practicing communist!

#### POSTING LOCATIONS

Because the posting location that you use is a hidden (in plain sight) contract, the explanation of the contract and the solution are given right here.

The U. S. Postal Service delivers your post to a box near where you live. The “mail” box may be at the end of your driveway if you live in the country, or it may be attached to the house, if you live in town. For reasons that will be obvious in a few minutes, if your mail is delivered through a slot in the door, you will soon buy a new door and a mail box.

All street addresses are assigned by the U. S. Postal Service. All mailing addresses are assigned by the U. S. Postal Service. All commercially made mailboxes have the words “Property of the U.S. Government,” or similar words, printed on the box. For a complete explanation, contact your Postmaster. The Postmaster will verify this and tell you that this is to make tampering with the mail a federal offense. He will tell you that even if you have a home made mailbox, it is still government property and any unauthorized use or misuse is a federal offense. Answer this one, Mr. Postmaster: “If the mailbox is a slot in my door, doesn’t that make my entire home subject to federal ownership, control, and oversight?” The answer is yes, regardless of how he wants to qualify his answer.

When a government agent asks you, “*Do you live at 1132 Market Street, Ballard, WA, 98117?*” the agent is asking you if you live in the mailbox that is attached to a certain house in the City of Ballard, in the Buck Act Federal Area designated by the number “98117” and the two letter designation “WA.” If you answer, “Yes” then you have provided evidence that you are under the jurisdiction of the federal government. The same claim of government jurisdiction is made by you and may be made against you when you use that address on your postings.

**The remedies?** In thinking about the parts of the contract, you see that all that is needed is that you not claim to live in the mailbox or receive a benefit, but that you receive your post *in care of* that box. Some Patriots carry this even further and add “C/O General Delivery, C/O 1132 Market Street.” The ongoing discussion around the “General Delivery” part is whether or not the delivery to a private home is a government benefit whereas the delivery to a *government-owned* mailbox is *not* a benefit. In the late 1800’s, attorneys, judges, and bankers refused to receive their post anywhere but in General Delivery. Now why would they do that?

In the above example, the two-letter designation in the address is “WA.” The abbreviation for Washington is “Wash.” Or “Wn.” not “WA.” What we have here is another federally imposed and regulated means of identifying federal jurisdiction. If the government has the authority (audacity?) to impose that our Sovereign Republic use a federal designation, then the state has no sovereignty left. The *remedy* is to always spell out the entire name of the state.

The **Zip Code** is very easy to deal with. Either don’t use it, or put a box around it. If your word processor won’t draw a box around it, then use square brackets or draw the box by hand. When the State issues a Certificate of Title for an automobile, the actual Title Number is on the Certificate, but it is carefully boxed in. The Title Number is present on the page, but it is for information and reference ONLY and not to be confused with part of the content of the Certificate. We are using their own procedure for our protection. We are being as wise as the serpents, but as harmless as doves. The above address could be written:

Harrold Snodgrass  
C/O 1132 Market Street  
Ballard, Washington 98117

The last hidden contract we need to deal with regarding mailing and posting is the mere act of using the Postal Service. In the matter of **U.S. v. Austin G. Cooper**, it was argued that the mere act of placing an envelope in the mailbox obligated one to pay off the entire national

debt. Because the Constitution obligates congress to provide a post office and maintain post roads, and congress has failed in the performance of their duties to the American People, we may write "without recourse" or "no recourse" on the envelope. This signifies that if the constitutionally imposed form of delivery of mail were available, we would have used that service. The hidden contract referred to in U.S. v. Austin G. Cooper is therefore made void through impossibility.

The authority on invisible contracts is George Mercier. George wrote several letters, articles, and books on the subject of invisible contracts and the best of his work is on the Internet at: <http://state-citizen.org/files/>. This site is operated by Richard McDonald, and it has many of the documents which support the facts stated in this book. While we are on the subject of supporting facts, I will give you two more web sites that are loaded with information. The first is Ken Adler's great site found at: <http://www.loop.com/~kenadler/sov/files.htm>. The other is at: <http://www.uhuh.com>. One of these sites has a certified copy of the 13<sup>th</sup> amendment as published by the State of Maine in 1825. This is a real treat! If you are on the Internet, or know someone that is, you need to check out these files and download whatever looks interesting.

### SUMMARY

Contracts are so powerful and so convoluted that it can be very difficult for an untrained person to tell the difference between a contract and a law. The Constitution *protects* our right to *accept* a contract with the International Banking/industrial cartels because "We, the People" never gave the government a grant of power to interfere in our lives in any way. This chapter has exposed a few of the more important contracts we have been tricked into signing. Most importantly, by this time everyone should understand *why* there are no trivial contracts.

---

When Nelson A. Rockefeller was being questioned by Congress prior to his installment into a government appointment, he was asked, "How much money did you make last year?"

Rockefeller answered, "\$650 million."

"And how much Income Tax did you pay on that?" they asked.

"Nothing." was the reply.

The Rockefeller family has all of their money and property tied up in *Trusts*. They use their political influence to increase the security of their Trusts. Isn't it a good idea for you to let the Rockefellers use *their* influence to secure *your* equity, too?

---

The following is an excerpt from the Revised Code of Washington. It is included for educational purposes only. You will notice that the Torrens System was instituted during the First World War, right after the Federal Reserve and IRS were enacted.

**“RCW 65.12.220 Registration--Effect.** The obtaining of a decree of registration and receiving of a certificate of title shall be deemed *an agreement* running with the land and binding upon the applicant and the successors in title, that the land shall be and forever remain registered land, subject to the provisions of this chapter and of all acts amendatory thereof, unless the same shall be withdrawn from registration in the manner hereinafter provided. All dealings with the land or any estate or interest therein after the same has been brought under this chapter, and all liens, encumbrances, and charges upon the same shall be made only subject to the terms of this chapter, so long as said land shall remain registered land and until the same shall be withdrawn from registration in the manner hereinafter provided. [1917 c 62 § 1; 1907 c 250 § 33; RRS § 10657.] *[emphasis added]*

**“RCW 65.12.225 Withdrawal authorized--Effect.** The owner or owners of any lands, the title to which has been or shall hereafter be registered in the manner provided by law, shall have the right to withdraw said lands from registration in the manner hereinafter provided, and after the same have been so withdrawn from registration, shall have the right to contract concerning, convey, encumber or otherwise deal with the title to said lands as freely and to the same extent and in the same manner as though the title had not been registered. [1917 c 62 § 2; RRS § 10658.]

**“RCW 65.12.230 Application to withdraw.** The owner or owners of registered lands, desiring to withdraw the same from registration, shall make and file with the **registrar of titles** in the county in which said lands are situated, an application in substantially the following form:

To the registrar of titles in the county of . . . . ., state of Washington:

I, (or we), . . . . ., the undersigned registered owner . . . in fee simple of the following described real property situated in the county of . . . . ., state of Washington, to wit:

(here insert the description of the property),

hereby make application to have the title to said real property withdrawn from registration.

Witness my (or our) hand . . . and seal . . . this . . . . day of . . . . ., 19 . . .

\_\_\_\_\_  
Applicant's signature.

Said application shall be acknowledged in the same manner as is required for the acknowledgment of deeds. [1917 c 62 § 3; RRS § 10659.]

**“RCW 65.12.235 Certificate of withdrawal.** Upon the filing of such application and the payment of a fee of five dollars, the registrar of titles, if it shall appear that the application is signed and acknowledged by all the registered owners of said land, shall issue to the [applicant] a certificate in substantially the following form:

This is to certify, That . . . . . the owner (or owners) in fee simple of the following described **lands** situated in the county of . . . . ., state of Washington, the title to which has been heretofore registered under the laws of the state of Washington, to wit: (here insert description of the property), having heretofore filed his (or their) application for the withdrawal of the title

to said **lands** from the registry system; NOW, THEREFORE, The title to said above described **lands** has been withdrawn from the effect and operation of the title registry system of the state of Washington and the owner (or owners) of said lands is (or are) by law authorized to contract concerning, convey, encumber or **otherwise deal with the title to said lands in the same manner and to the same extent as though said title had never been registered.**

Witness my hand and seal this . . . . day of . . . . ., 19. . .

\_\_\_\_\_  
Registrar of Titles for . . . . . county.

[1973 c 121 § 1; 1917 c 62 § 4; RRS § 10660.]

**“RCW 65.12.240 Effect of recording.** The person receiving such certificate of withdrawal shall record the same in the record of deeds in the office of the county auditor of the county in which the lands are situated and thereafter the title to said lands shall be conveyed or encumbered in the same manner as the title to lands that have not been registered. [1917 c 62 § 5; RRS § 10661.]

**“RCW 65.12.245 Title prior to withdrawal unaffected.** \*This act shall not be construed to disturb the effect of any proceedings under said registry system, wherein the question of title to said real property has been determined, but all proceedings had in connection with the registering of said title, relating to the settlement or determination of said title, prior to such withdrawal, shall have the same force and effect as if said title still remained under said registry system. [1917 c 62 § 6; RRS § 10662.]

**“NOTES:**

“\*Reviser's note: The language "This act" appears in 1917 c 62 codified herein as RCW 65.12.220 through 65.12.245.”

-----  
**These are my suggested modifications for the withdrawal form. The letter is written in real time. It avoids the word “real” (royal) property and substitutes “land.”**

To the “registrar of titles” in the \_\_\_\_\_ County, Washington Republic:

I, (or we), \_\_\_\_\_, the undersigned registered owner(s) in **fee simple** of the following described land situated in the \_\_\_\_\_ County, Washington Republic, to wit:

(here insert the description of the land),

do hereby make application for delivery of the title describing said land being withdrawn out of registration.

Witness my (or our) hand and seal this \_\_\_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_\_, 19 \_\_\_\_.

\_\_\_\_\_  
Applicant's signature.

**Notary Block as on all other recorded documents.**

**NOTE: “registrar of titles” is not capitalized. It is not the title of an office; - it is a job description. Substitute the name of the office that performs that function.**

## 13 — DEVELOPING YOUR STRATEGY

Luke 9:62; Romans 14:5

The Bible warns us against taking halfway measures when we decide to do something. We need to be fully persuaded in our own mind that what we propose to do is right and then pursue that course without looking back. *Remember Lot's wife?* It would be wonderful if every person in the world could be presented with sufficient evidence to cause them to leave the jurisdiction of man-made gods and governments and seek the true liberty offered by the one true God. Barring that, I would want even the people who wish to be servants of false gods to do so out of free choice with enough evidence to make an informed decision.

The problem rests in that the government is just as happy to accept your worship (obedience) through *ignorance* as it is through knowledge. The God of the Bible is the *only one* who actually says He wants you to “*Study to show thyself approved.*” God wants you to seek Sovereignty and Liberty through knowledge. One of your first steps toward Liberty, then, should be to gain knowledge.

The first knowledge to gain is knowledge of the **law of God (Hosea 4:6)**. The solution: read God's law book, *the Bible*. This will give you an appreciation of the jurisdiction into which you will be moving. It is a much “Kinder, Gentler” government than the one that President Bush tried to sell us.

*You need to GET COMPLETELY OUT OF DEBT.* Solution: *discharge* all personal debts and *rescind the contracts* obligating you to underwrite all public debts. This means to pay off or discharge all your bills, *bank mortgages*, etc. and get rid of your Social Security card.

When you have succeeded in breaking the bondage of debt, you will enter God's jurisdiction free of all ties that could cause any earthly government or corporation to be on your tail, harassing you, and causing you grief. You will be free. You will enjoy the blessings of liberty, as did the founding fathers of the American Nation.

Before leaving Egypt on their famous “Exodus,” God directed the Israelites to “borrow” all the gold and silver from their neighbors [Exodus 12:35-36]. It should be obvious that God does not intend for us to enter His kingdom in a penniless condition (see quote on front cover). If we are in debt, we may keep that for which we labored (equity) and return the balance of the debt to the *creator of the debt*. If a bank has created a debt out of thin air, then we may give the debt (air) back to them. The exact manner in which this may be done is a bit too involved for the scope of *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL*, because each Citizen's situation is peculiar. But rest assured, there are several easy and legal ways to return *their* debt to the bankers and keep our own property as we leave the government's jurisdiction.

Lecturers provided by **Anderson's Ark** in Port Townsend, Washington use an interesting chart as a teaching aid. They draw it on a chalkboard as they give their lecture. The chart shows the relationship between God's government and man's government and describes the different characteristics. It also shows the attributes of free Sovereigns under God's law and the obedient/disobedient slaves under man's law. Due to the nature of this teaching aid, I doubt if it has ever been drawn exactly the same way twice. A fair representation of the chart is included in **Appendix XVIII**.

I had originally planned to use a few pages to interpret and explain this chart, but I have come to realize that this *entire book* is an interpretation of the chart (or the other way around). It would be a better exercise for the readers if they would study *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL* until

they understand the principles well enough to write the chart for themselves. Like regaining Sovereignty, it will bring more pleasure than pain.

Look at the chart in **Appendix XVIII** now. Locate the lists of attributes of “**Obedient Slaves**” and “**Disobedient Slaves**.” You will see that disobedient slaves are obligated for all of the same debts that the obedient slaves have, except *they don’t want to pay them*. Evidently they remember some inspiring phrases like “*endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights,*” “*life, liberty, and pursuit of happiness,*” “*right to keep and bear arms,*” “*fair trial,*” “*freedom of speech,*” and so on. The International Elite are very disappointed in these slaves who have *waived* all these rights by contract yet **still wish to exercise them**. Shouldn’t disobedient slaves be punished? *Of course they should*. On the other hand, if they *really* wish to have the liberty that they dream about, since they already have the *desire* it is only a short step to *fulfillment*. The *obedient* slaves of the false gods will *never* make good Sovereigns because they lack the dedication and strong desire for Liberty.

It may help to understand the chart if you think of the “man’s government” side as being the same as the “God’s government,” except inverted. On the right side of the page it shows a system wherein God is the *Supreme* Sovereign, God created man, man created the Constitution, the Constitution created the government, and the government created corporations. On the left side of the page you see where the corporations rule (banks and industrial cartels, I. G. Farben, etc.), the corporations own the government, the Constitution has been superseded by contracts, man is a slave, and God is dead.

**Is there safety in following God?** Absolutely! Look at Job’s fifth answer to his “miserable comforters” in **Job 19:25-27**. This ancient man of God knew that after his body has completely gone back to dust, yet in *his* flesh, not the flesh of another, he will see God. There is a kind of eternal safety here that servants of man’s government cannot even begin to understand. The promise is also made many times in the Psalms that one who depends upon God will not be ashamed. This obviously does not mean someone trusting in a 501(C)(3) government church.

**Is there safety in being an obedient slave?** No. Moreover, it does not make any difference how obedient you are, you are headed for some big-time trouble. You have obligated yourself to trillions of dollars of debt by co-signing on a debt that is *impossible* to pay. The bankers to whom you owe the performance on the SS-5 contract are eventually going to come around to collect the debt. When you cannot pay up, you *will* suffer the penalties. Count on it. They did not offer you the Social Security contract and woo you into signing it without having a very firm idea of benefit to *themselves*. The International Bankers *certainly* do not care about *you*. They just smirk and say, “*You should have thought about the consequences before you signed the contract.*” They have a goal in mind and you can bet your last dollar (silver, US Mint) that they are going to keep working toward their goal until they finally succeed. What they eventually want from you, your children, and your grandchildren is **absolute slavery**. The “**New World Order**” is just another name for “**Old World Feudalism**.” They want us all to grovel at their feet and beg for every crumb of bread to extend our miserable lives.

**Are you any better off as a disobedient slave?** *Nope!* Not even a *little* bit. In this condition, you have no protection from God because you still have *active covenants* with other jurisdictions [Exodus 23:32]. You also have *aggressive* persecution from your master, the government. Whereas the obedient slaves may *serve* in the armed forces of their government, the armed forces may actually be *used against* the disobedient slaves. Remember what happened at Mount Carmel Center, near Waco, Texas? The Branch Davidians were doing the best they knew how to follow the Bible yet they had entangled themselves in contracts with the

government. They had a "license" issued by **BATF** to deal in firearms. Businesses and individuals must show an EIN or SSN to be given the *permission* (license) to deal in firearms. When certain members of the Branch Davidians successfully hacked the **BATF** computer and found that the **BATF** was participating in the transportation of fully automatic weapons from Iraq to the United States to arm the street gangs, **BATF** exercised its option under martial law to wipe the entire church off the face of the Earth. There is no safety in being a disobedient slave, no matter how disobedient *or* how well armed.

In taking their first steps toward liberty, most people over the age of twelve years will have to unlearn as much as they have to learn. Is it any wonder why so many people get confused about how to claim Sovereignty? If we try to leave the jurisdiction of man's government without immediately seeking God's protection, we suffer. There are two problem areas. The *first* problems will come between the time we decide that we no longer wish to be obedient servants of man until we finally claim our Sovereignty under God's rule. The *second* set of problems will come *after* we claim Sovereignty in that we may be tempted to go to excess and misuse our Liberty.

The remedy for the *first* problem area is to keep it as short as possible. It took me about five years and many thousands of headaches. It could take you as little as *two weeks* to strategically withdraw from the Earthly system, if you are properly prepared. Two weeks is simply too short of a time for the government to react to your NOTICE. A bureaucrat cannot seem to even answer a letter in two weeks, let alone follow all of the *due process* he will now be required to follow because he is dealing with a Sovereign instead of someone under contract. OK, we have got that problem whipped.

The *second* problem area rears its ugly head if we go to excess once we have found freedom. If we break *God's laws, as His servant, He* will discipline us. Study the sixth chapter of Romans and you will see a picture of a group that thought they could do just about anything they wanted as free people. **WRONG!** The word "repent" means to change direction. Evidently, these Romans did not have a copy of *Strong's Concordance!* Instead of writing about this, I will let you read it and think about it yourself. It is beyond the scope of this book.

#### SUMMARY

If your first reading of this short chapter makes it appear to be difficult to begin your transition to Sovereignty, then read it again. We have spent our *entire lives* living in subjection to a system of government that is totally foreign to the Bible. Learning how to live like a free Person is *not* as easy as filing your affidavits. If it were that easy, I would be selling a small packet of forms for a few dollars. Because it is not possible to be both lazy and liberated, people need to strain their brain. They also need to set aside a special time for prayer.

The first step toward Sovereignty always seems to be triggered by an event that causes a Citizen to realize that the government is doing something that is basically, fundamentally, and inherently *evil*. The next phases range from **acceptance** (at one end of the spectrum) through **confusion**, **verbal protest**, and **withdrawal** from the system, to **violent protest** on the other end. Obviously, neither end of the spectrum has any merit. To *accept* something that is evil is to *become* evil, ourselves. To *violently* protest is to become either *dead* or another excuse for more government oppression. The best solution is to withdraw from the system and become a free Sovereign.

Black's Law Dictionary – Fifth Edition  
West Publishing Co. 1979

**Cancel** – to obliterate; to strike or cross out. To destroy the effect of an instrument by defacing, obliterating, expunging, or erasing it. To revoke or recall; to annul or destroy, make void or invalid, or set aside. To rescind; abandon; repeal; surrender; waive; terminate. The term is sometimes equivalent to “discharge” or “pay”. Debes v. Texas Nat. Bank of Beaumont, Tex.Civ.App., 92 S.W.2d 476, 479. See also Abrogation; Cancellation; Rescind; Rescission of contract; Revocation; Termination

**Rescission of contract.** A “rescission” amounts to the unmaking of a contract, or an undoing of it from the beginning, and not merely a termination, and it may be effected by mutual agreement of parties, or by one of the parties declaring rescission of contract without consent of the other if a legally sufficient ground therefore exists, or by applying to courts for a decree of rescission. Abdallah, Inc. v. Martin, 242 Minn. 416, 65 N.W.2d 641, 644. Annulling, abrogation or unmaking of contract and the placing of the parties to it in status quo. Sessions v Meadows, 13 Cal.App2d 748, 57 P.2d 548, 549. It necessarily involves a repudiation of the contract and a refusal of the moving party to be further bound by it. See also Renunciation; Repudiation.

An act of an equitable nature in which a party seeks to be relieved of his obligations under a contract on the grounds of mutual *mistake, fraud, impossibility*, etc.

**Author's Note:** Do you understand how Americans were *defrauded* into becoming Instrumentalities of the United States and therefore liable for the entire “national” debt? Can you accept the fact that it would be *impossible* for you, in your capacity of being the United States, to pay off a twenty *trillion* dollar debt? Do you understand the legally sufficient grounds for your claim to Rescind the Social Security contract? At the beginning of the book, I assured you that what we are doing is completely legal. **Here is proof that you have the right to rescind the contracts.**

**Discretionary acts.** (partial definition) Those acts wherein there is no hard and fast rule as to the course of conduct that one must or must not take and, if there is clearly defined rule, such would eliminate discretion.

**Abuse of Discretion** (partial definition) “Abuse of Discretion” by a trial court is any unreasonable, unconscionable and arbitrary action taken without proper consideration of facts and law pertaining to matter submitted.

**Author's Note:** As we can see, any acts of government that are clearly permitted, clearly defined, or clearly authorized in the Constitution are **Discretionary acts.** Under the tenth amendment, any federal action that is *not clearly* allowed in the Constitution is prohibited by the ninth amendment and is therefore an *abuse of discretion.*

---

**Woe to those who decree unjust statutes and to those who continually record unjust decisions, to deprive the needy of justice, and to rob the poor of My people of their rights...  
Isaiah 10:1,2**

## 14 — UNTANGLING THE WEB

This Chapter will identify **specific** Trusts and other contracts that are currently controlling your life and give you **specific** information on how to deal with each one. Many contracts are *not* covered, but the variety of examples given should be more than adequate to point the way toward a remedy for any other kind of contract.

Addresses given in this book are subject to change. State Statutes are subject to amendment. USC and CFR numbers are subject to deletion and amendment. Uniform Commercial Code (UCC) numbers are subject to change and amendment. Before you notarize, record, file, or serve *any* document, **you**, and **only you**, are responsible for everything in that document. Sovereigns, by definition, are people who can stand on their own two feet. You might as well get yourself geared up for the responsibility right from the start.

If you are having trouble finding certain addresses for state agencies (Secretary of State, etc.), you might call your state ombudsman. If you have trouble finding your way around a law library, it may be wise to use the services of a paralegal or a legal researcher to find your state's statute on **Release of Appointment**. There are addresses for several excellent sources of information given in **Appendix XXI**, but **the first thing you should always do is to pray**. You should pray before you read this book. You should pray before you write an affidavit. You should pray before you notarize and record a document. You should pray before you mail off your documents to the oppressors. You should pray before you take your car out on the road. You should pray before you go to a bank to open an account. Whatever you do, *don't* make the mistake of sending off your documents and *then* praying. God knows your needs before you ask, but one of your needs is to show Him you recognize His jurisdiction over you. ***Don't forget to pray!***

The remedy for any enslaving contract is *repentance*. As we know, repentance is the action word that means we will take any steps and make any effort needed to reverse our course. Repentance requires **knowledge** and **tools**. ***STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL***, the ***Bible***, ***Strong's Concordance***, the ***IRS Code***, the ***Rules of Civil Procedure***, and ***Black's Law Dictionary***, are the **tools** you need. Now you must decide to either use them or lose them. Prayer is not an act of repentance. When we pray, we ask for grace, forgiveness, and assistance. It is only when we file these documents that we are performing an act of repentance.

I know that you are ready to go to work, but hold your horses for just a few more minutes. First we need to learn how to *write a few basic kinds of documents* and cover a few *basic paperwork techniques*, then we can roll up our sleeves and get down to the nitty-gritty.

1. We need to know how to **make an affidavit**. An affidavit is a statement of law and fact made by a person *competent to testify* from a *first hand knowledge of the facts* and *sworn to be the truth*. An affidavit can be either witnessed by two people or *notarized*. Notarized is usually better for you. There are examples of affidavits in the appendixes.

2. We need to know how to **record a document**. Call your county court house and find out how they record documents in your county. Some counties have a county recorder. In other counties, the auditor will handle those duties. Get phone numbers, names of officers, and the mailing address as well as the cost of recording documents. It usually costs a few dollars to record the first page and a dollar or two for each additional page. While you have them on the phone, ask if they have any ***special*** requirements for recording documents. Ask for a copy of the regulations, because you will need to follow the rules ***exactly***. Be sure to leave generous

margins and lots of room at the top and bottom of your documents for the recording numbers that the County Recorder is going to stamp on each page. I would advise recording these documents in the state (and preferably the county) of your birth, if it is convenient. This is not really necessary, because the effect of **any** recorded document is to put all effected parties on constructive notice regardless of where it is filed. You need to record your Affidavit of Citizenship and Release of Appointment documents *before* you send them to Social Security, IRS, and the other agencies. When you get your answers from IRS and SSA, you may wish to record the answers, also.

There is a legal principle called "continuance of evidence." Under this principle, all written evidence must be continuous, that is, on a single piece of paper. The Declaration of Independence was written on a single piece of paper for this reason. They did have smaller pieces of paper in 1776, and didn't *have* to use a single piece of paper, but for assurance that King George III received all of the evidence intact, a single piece of paper was used. What we are doing today, is writing and developing our documents in normal size font, like Times New Roman, 12 point, then reducing the font size until the document fits on a single page. Using a good quality laser printer, we can go down to font size 3 and the writing is still legible with a magnifying glass. Each document that you file will be on a single piece of paper. Your Independent Contract for Services will fit on a single piece of paper easily. One of the reasons that you need to contact the recorder of documents in your county is to verify that there is no prohibition of small type fonts.

If you must use copies of some of these documents for purposes other than recording or mailing, then you may make "working copies" of the document in a normal font.

3. We need to know how to **revoke a signature**. See the examples in the appendixes. I recommend filing a revocation of signature on ALL past filings of 1040 forms. There are other documents from which you will want to revoke your signature, so learn how to do this correctly. What's the best way to go about revoking any signature? I am sure glad you brought that up because I just about forgot to tell you!

Because you revoke your signature with a *special purpose affidavit*, the revocation document begins like all other affidavits, with a statement that you are competent and telling the truth. Next, you state the purpose of the affidavit, which is for revoking your signature off of some document; i.e., "*all past filings of forms 1040 and associated forms that you have made from the year ###/###/### until this \_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_, in the year #####.*" Follow this with the cause that justifies revocation, i.e., fraud, incapacity, mistake, alteration of contract, etc., and close with your signature, the date, and notary block.

It is *best* to have a copy of the original document in front of you and clearly identify the document in your revocation affidavit. In the case of 1040 forms and associated IRS filings you should be able to identify them generally (i.e., "*all forms 1040 and associated forms filed with the IRS between the years 1958 and 1997*"). On your Social Security Application form SS-5 you have to use a Form SSA-L996 and request a copy of the original from the SSA, because this type of document must be identified precisely. If you want to add revocation of signature to the forms you file with the SSA it can only strengthen your position. The reason you may have to use an FOIA to get a copy is because so many of us (at least at my age) aren't sure whether we signed the SS-5 or one of our parents signed it. We also need the **exact date** it was signed. The examples should make it clear enough.

4. We need to know how to **prove we mailed a document**. To prove that we mailed an envelope all we need is a *certified mail receipt and the return receipt*. To prove what was *IN*

the envelope we need a **CERTIFICATE OF MAILING**, signed by a third party saying that *they witnessed* these documents being placed in the envelope and placed in the mail. The example given in **Appendix XVI** is more than adequate. Although it is better if you make your own, you may make as many copies of the example in **Appendix XVI** as you wish. I do ask that you “white-out” or cover the page number, appendix number, and footer before you make the copies. Include **proof of mailing** with everything you send to the bureaucrats for the next few months. You will find that once you become a Sovereign, your correspondence with bureaucrats will drop off to absolute zero. You have so few documents to file that it would be a shame to run into trouble just because some slimy bureaucrat claims that he did not receive what you sent to him. By including the *copy* of the Certificate of Mailing with anything you send, and *keeping the original*, you head off these predictable problems.

5. We need to **keep the right records**. Hand-in-hand with this is having a secure, fire and waterproof storage place for the documents you do keep. **DO NOT USE A BANK'S SAFETY DEPOSIT BOX!!!!** I keep all of our original documents in a 9"x12" brown envelope in a secure location. Each of my family members has their own copies of the documents. I have burned all of the old 1040 forms. I have burned the records from old businesses. I spent years lugging those papers around just to please the IRS. I do not want to keep ANY records around that have the old SSN on them. No pay records. *Nothing*. The records I want to keep and study are the ones that show how much *profit* I make, not how much I *lose*. Training ourselves to *lie* to the IRS about how much money we *lose* in our business is *bad business*.

6. We need to **keep and send the correct copies**. There are copies you may run off on your home Xerox machine and these are called **copies**. “**Certified Copies**” are copies made by the *custodian* of the original document and are certified to be a true and accurate copy. If you are the custodian of the original document, then *you* are the one who certifies that what *you* are sending is a true and correct copy. You type or write on it, “*This document is Certified by \_\_\_\_\_, who is the custodian of the original document, to be a true and correct copy of the original document.*” and then add your signature and the date. And there are “**Conforming Copies**” which are *extra originals* that you have prepared in advance and have *the clerk of the court* or *recording clerk* stamp them at the time of filing. When you must send “*original documents*” to a court, the SSA, or IRS, it is better to send a conforming copy or certified copy if the court will accept it. Using this procedure, you always control the originals.

7. Now we need to locate our state's procedure for **Release of Appointment**. Under Washington Statutes you look in **Revised Code of Washington (RCW) 11.95.010** through **11.95.050**. There may be a cross-reference to other states' laws in your law library. If there is, you got lucky. If there is not, then look in the index of your State's Code for “**Release of Appointment**,” “**revocation of power of attorney**,” “**revocation of trust**,” or maybe it will be listed under “**power of appointment, release**.” If you have trouble finding it, the law librarian will usually be glad to help. If your law librarian is busy or you have bad luck and have a sorehead for a librarian, then go to a legal researcher or paralegal service for help. It may cost a few dollars for the help, but how much will you lose by waiting, or doing it wrong? Please remember to send a copy of the statute or the statute numbers to the Author so that we may “**dig [our] well where others may drink**.” Future editions of this book will contain more appendixes with as many State Statutes on Release of Appointment as readers will send to the author.

#### DOCUMENT HANDLING CHECKLIST

- Prepare your affidavits and **notarize** them.
- Record** the documents at the county recording office.

- \_\_\_ Write your **cover letters**.
- \_\_\_ Make a **zillion copies** of each document.
- \_\_\_ Prepare and **address your envelopes**, return receipts, and certificates of mailing.
- \_\_\_ Find a big, empty table or a bare spot on the floor and lay down your envelopes, certificates of mailing, return receipts, and the appropriate documents to go to each of the agencies in the correct piles.
- \_\_\_ Write the Certified Mail number on each of the documents in that envelope.
- \_\_\_ Find a **friend** who will double check that all the right documents are in each envelope
- \_\_\_ Have your friend **sign the Certificate of Mailing** forms.
- \_\_\_ AFTER the Certificates of Mailing are signed, make a **copy** of each Certificate
- \_\_\_ Put THE COPY in the **correct envelope**.
- \_\_\_ YOU maintain control of your ORIGINAL DOCUMENTS whenever possible.
- \_\_\_ **Mail them**, then *take the friend that signed your mailing certificates out to lunch*.

### PREPARING OUR DOCUMENTS

The first document to prepare is our **Declaration of Earthly Occupancy**. There is a better example in an **Appendix 1**. You do not need to get creative on this or any other document. Stick to the facts. Keep it simple.

(Lead in paragraph that you use on all affidavits goes above)

1. I was born on \_\_\_ day of \_\_\_ month of \_\_\_ year in (city) , \_\_\_ county , (state) Republic, united States of America. I am the offspring of (father) and the child of (mother( maiden name)). (from state birth certificate)
2. My Citizenship is in the Heavens as per Philippians, Chapter 3, verse 20. Heaven is my eternal home. I am under the exclusive jurisdiction of God's Heavenly Kingdom.  
(Torah-only adherents would cite Job 19:25-27)
3. I am a Judicial Power Occupant of (State of your birth) Republic, and I am thereby entitled to all the rights, privileges, and immunities recognized in the Constitution for \_\_\_\_\_ Republic.
4. By virtue of my Judicial Power Occupancy in \_\_\_\_\_ Republic I am also a Judicial Power Occupant of the united States of America and entitled to all the rights, privileges, and immunities recognized in the Constitution for the united States as per Article IV Section 2 of the Constitution for the united States.
5. I am not now, nor have I ever been a citizen or subject of the United States as contemplated by the 14<sup>th</sup> amendment to the Constitution for the untied States.
6. I am not nor have I ever been a resident of the United States nor of any State within the United States. I am not a British subject.

(finish it off with the date, signature, & notary block)

At the risk of sounding foolish, I'll point out that in paragraph #1 it states you are the *offspring* of (father) and *child* of (mother). **MEN DO NOT HAVE CHILDREN**. I know it sounds foolish to mention it, but court cases have been lost because of seemingly trivial points like this.

In the above example, you will notice that sometimes you use the words "United States" and sometimes "united States." United States, *both words capitalized*, means the definition found in **28 USC § 3002(15)** and **26 USC § 7701**. The United States means Washington, DC and/or some Territory, corporation, agency, or instrumentality "**of**" (meaning, "*belonging to*")

Washington, DC. When the term “united States” (*lower-case u*) is used, it refers to the American Nation, its land, and its people. With both letters capitalized, other than at the first of a sentence where the meaning would be ambiguous, the words mean only corporations, agencies, or instrumentalities. Go ahead and use it both ways, but **NEVER** mix them up.

You may also have noticed that the affidavit refers to the “Constitution **FOR** the united States.” The word “of” means “belongs to.” The authors of the Constitution used the word “**FOR**” *in the Preamble* because they had the right to place limits on the government they were creating. The government belongs to the Constitution, not the other way around. The Constitution can change the government, not the other way around. This is also the reason why you should avoid using “State of” and “County of” and use “Washington State” or “Island County.” Spelling, capitalization, grammar, *everything* is more important in your recorded documents than it is in this book. This book’s job is to help you understand Sovereignty, how to get there, and how to *stay* there, so I have a little leeway in how I write. Your documents *may* have to be able to withstand the scrutiny of the supreme Court, so be very careful. If you are conscientious, your best *will* be good enough.

A “**resident**” *in* or *of* a STATE or the U. S. means that your *incorporated person* is found (resides) within the **CORPORATE/POLITICAL** entity. It does *not* mean you live on the land. A *Doctor’s* residency is not where he feeds his pet cat, it is at *the hospital*. The correct term might be **resident of the forum**. You could even *live* in Washington, DC and not be a “*resident of the United States*” *if* you have no *contract* with the government. Do not be tempted to add or take anything away from line 6 in the above example of an affidavit of Citizenship, and *be sure* that you understand the reason. When the government uses the term “resident” it is using a low-down, dirty trick. They have educated us [*plank 10, Communist Manifesto*] to think that “residency” means *only* where we sleep at night, yet they use an alternate definition, without stipulation.

The next document you will prepare is your revocation of signature from your bank’s signature cards. Do this *after* you have transferred all of your accounts into *new* accounts, preferably with a different bank, that you have opened in the name of your Church or your Trust. **Appendix 3** has an example. An example of a cover letter to send with this document is found in **Appendix 8**. Don’t be surprised or upset if the bank does not return the signature card. Usually, the bank clerk will send a non-responsive answer, but just file the answer with your copy of the affidavit, constructive notice, certificate of mailing, certified mail receipt, and return receipt card. If the bank ever violates your rights, you have them nailed!

Revocation of signature on bank “signature cards” can be done any time, but **MUST**, for your own protection, be done before or concurrent with mailing your mass of affidavits revoking your Social Security Card. No government agency is likely to harass you for revoking your signature from the card as long as they still have their hooks into you with your SSN, but *woe unto you* if you leave yourself subject to the Treasury’s administrative rules and try to break the contract with Social Security. Your SSN is on the bank records so you would be using the SSN to receive a benefit and you would be committing a fraud. You would have to make a choice between either letting them ignore your Release of Appointment or let them prosecute you for fraud. If you don’t like those choices, then take care of the signature cards *before* you revoke the SSN. The best time is the same day that you cancel your accounts. If you have any CD’s with the bank, determine now how long you want to leave them in there. It may be best to pull the money out and take a small loss so you may go ahead with your plans for Sovereignty.

When I revoked Social Security's power of appointment over myself and my family, I hand-carried the affidavits to the Secretary of State's office in Olympia, Washington and came away with a **State receipt** and a letter on Government stationery showing that the power of appointment had been revoked. The law has been simplified since then and now all you have to do is *serve legal notice on all parties*. In Washington, it is also an optional extra to publish the NOTICE in a legal newspaper. Some newspapers are designated to carry legal announcements and some are not. A phone call to the editor of the paper will let you know. **You** will be signing the affidavit so **you** need to be sure you are following the statutes on Release of Appointment to the letter. If you need assistance in interpreting any legalese, talk with a paralegal.

I know that you are tired of reading, studying, and *talking* about doing something and are anxious to get to work. We have finally covered enough basics to start *doing* something.

Here is the fun one! Let's give Social Security and the IRS the boot! The best address I have to mail the affidavit to Social Security is:

**Social Security Administration**  
**ORSI, DE, E&R**  
**3-E-26 Operations Building**  
**Baltimore, Maryland 21235**

I don't have a ghost of an idea what all that stuff in the address means, but I *can* tell you this much. That is where I sent my affidavits and the results were very satisfying. The IRS does not ask me for money. They won't answer the two "nice" letters I have written to them!

Here is a list of what you send to Social Security:

1. *their* **Social Security Card** (original or replacement), being returned to its owner
2. your "**Affidavit of Earthly Citizenship**" (certified copy showing recorder's stamps)
3. the "**Revocation of Power of Appointment**" (certified copy showing recorder's stamps, and, if you filed an "**Instrument of Release**" with a *state office*, the certified copy you send should also show the state's office stamps)
4. **revocation of signature** from 1040 forms and signature card (certified copies)
5. (optional) **revocation of signature** from SS-5 form (only if YOU signed it)
6. **cover letter** or Constructive Notice (original, keep a copy)
7. **Certificate of Mailing** (copy)

When you get the green "return receipt" card back, staple your originals and copies of what you sent to Social Security into one great big stack and put them in an envelope that is plainly marked, front and back, **SOVEREIGNTY DOCUMENTS - SOCIAL SECURITY**, and put the envelope in a safe place. If or when you get a written response from Social Security, you will add it to the envelope. When the SSA answered my letter, they said that I could not revoke my Social Security Number and that they were returning my card. They lied. Twice! They did *not* send *their* card (I had given it *back* to them) and the release *was* sufficient.

You will also send copies of everything that you sent to Social Security (except the Social Security Card and the SSA cover letter) to the offices in the following list. Each office shall have its own cover letter (Notice and Demand).

1. **your state's Secretary of State**
2. **your state's Attorney General**
3. **U. S. Secretary of State**
4. **U. S. Attorney General**
5. **U. S. Secretary of the Treasury**
6. **Internal Revenue Service (National)**

7. Internal Revenue Service (Regional)
8. Internal Revenue Service (District)
9. County District Attorney
10. County Sheriff
12. City Chief of Police
13. City Attorney
14. State Police headquarters

If you are currently a defendant in any legal action, you need to notify the court and the prosecution of your change of status. Notify the court with a **Habeas Corpus** and send a copy of the Habeas Corpus to the prosecutor. Attach certified copies of your documents as exhibits.

Sending the **NOTICE** to numbers 1 - 6 in the above list is quite necessary. The others are optional extras. By wording your cover letter to each of them in the form of a constructive notice, you will be providing the **rational connection** needed to establish proof of intent for a massive suit for deprivation of rights if you are harassed in any way. The public officials know this. Before they would harass you very much, they would watch and see if you were inclined to create any more debts. If you *do* go back into debt or try to be sneaky and use the old SSN just one more time, the constructive notice will not put them off.

Congratulations! **You did it!** You are no longer a “taxpayer.” See how easy it was to get rid of the Social Security Number? You did not have to beg permission from Social Security, the IRS, the Secretary of the Treasury, President Hillarius, or anybody else. You can do it without permission because you are not indebted to them and you have renounced and refused any and all future and potential benefits. As a Sovereign you are now **free** of most “mala prohibida” laws (look it up in *Black’s*) and yet you have *regained* the common law protection of “mala en se” laws.

Because it is so easy, why isn’t everybody doing it? Most likely because they do not understand the process. Sometimes it is because of fear. In addition, not all of those who *do* understand how will actually carry through with it. Again, why? It is kinda like swimming. Jumping in the deep end of the pool is the easy part. Learning how to swim to the ladder and climb out of the pool takes a little more preparation and effort.

Once you record these affidavits and send them off to the bureaucrats, you may **NEVER** use the SSN again, for anything, in any manner. Some people advise that you can use the number freely by appending something like “/tdc” for “threat, duress, and coercion” or “R/R” for “Rescinded/Revoked.” **This does not work!** If you *ever* use the number again for receiving a benefit, you not only become a party to the fraud, but you can **never again** make the claim that you were *tricked* into using the number. The papers you file make it abundantly clear that you understand the contractual nature of the number. If you *ever* use the SSN again, it could **only** be voluntarily and with knowledge that you were using it to receive a benefit and would therefore **re-instate the contract**. Using their number again to seek benefits from the government (or bank) would be *voluntarily* granting jurisdiction back to the god who has been oppressing you. Pick up your Bible and look up what happens to a slave who decides to stay with his master when he could have freedom. Use *Strong’s* and find the words “awl” and “door” (or look in **Appendix XXIV**). If you use the SSN again, you become a slave for life. At least that is the way I read it. You may take *great* comfort in the fact that it is no longer legal for **them** to use the number, either.

The easy part is getting rid of the number. The difficult part, for a *short* while, is adjusting to living with a name instead of a number. After all, we are creatures of habit and old

habits die hard. Once we *change* our habits, we find that life as a Sovereign is *much* easier than life as a slave. There will be more information on how to live free in later chapters.

From the collective experiences of the community of Sovereigns with whom I am acquainted, it appears that unless a Citizen has a SSN, the IRS and FBI are actually *prohibited* from contacting that person. I have not seen an entry in the FBI regulations that would support this, but my experience would indicate that it might well be true. *If it is true*, then it is because they no longer have presumptive evidence of U. S. citizenship (“subject” under the 14<sup>th</sup> amendment). It seems to make sense, but it will not have much effect on our behavior because we are still required by God’s law to be good people who do not vex or oppress our neighbors.

### AUTOMOBILE LICENSE PLATES

Let’s leave Social Security and the IRS behind us and learn how to deal with some other problems that plague Americans and cause an annual drain on their prosperity. I am talking about all of the things that go along with the ownership of a family automobile. The time to *begin* dealing with automobile license plates is before we even buy the car. The procedure is different when buying a new car than when buying a used car, and also different when buying from a car lot than it is when buying from a private party.

#### New Cars

If you are a Sovereign, you will be paying cash because you *refuse* to go into debt. This makes it easy. **Know exactly what car you want and at what price.** Talk with the dealers for the make and model car (or truck) you wish to buy and ask them if you can pay for it with silver or gold. If they want to make a sale (have you ever seen a car dealer that didn’t?) they will talk to you. Tell them that if they want to make the sale, they will give you the **Manufacturer’s Statement (or Certificate) of Origin (MSO or MCO)** and a **Bill of Sale**. The car will not be registered in this state and not licensed in this state. Because you are not a *resident* of the state, they would refuse to issue you a license, anyway. This is a perfectly legal procedure and if the dealer has been in business for a few years, he may have sold entire fleets of cars in this manner. Make certain that the receipt reads “(this car) **for consideration in the form of ### ounces of silver and/or ## ounces of gold.**” If they want some FRN’s in the deal, then add “*plus other consideration in the form of corporate notes of undetermined value.*” If you have an agreement with an Offshore Trust to manage your assets, then make *the Trust* the owner of the car. That does it. Because the state does not own the car and cannot prohibit your free passage along a public thoroughfare, you may now take your new car home. You do not need permission (license) because the car is *yours*.

#### Used Cars

Because the Manufacturer’s Statement of Origin on all new cars is sent to the state DMV with the first registration application (and Washington’s DMV tells us they destroy the MSO after they record it), you will probably not be able to get an MSO on a used car. The most painless way to buy a used car from a dealer is to go in with cash, make a cash deal, and get a Bill of Sale. Buy it in your own name. If they will take silver for all or partial (at least \$21) payment, then great, and **also** ask of you can buy it for your Trust. If they will not cooperate, it is no big deal. Just get the deal done as quickly as possible *without* getting the registration and certificate of title transferred. When I bought my wife’s car I told them I was taking it outside the United States and that I doubted that it would ever be back inside the United States again. Did you notice the capital letters? I was truthful. We have never taken that car to Washington, DC and I can’t imagine having any desire to go there. When I bought the car, it left the jurisdiction of the United States because it was purchased by a Sovereign Citizen of Washington

Republic who is *not a resident of their forum*. It will remain outside the jurisdiction of the United States until we decide to sell it. When we sell it, the purchaser may decide for himself whether he wants to register it with the state or use it under the family automobile doctrine. After we took the car home, I revoked Washington DMV's trusteeship over the car and sold the car to the Offshore Trust for \$21 in silver.

### Private Party

I bought a pickup from a private party, and that deal was the easiest of all. I gave him twenty-one silver dollars and a stack of \$100.00 FRN's. The receipt (Bill of Sale) said the truck was sold "*for 21 U. S. silver dollars plus other consideration in the form of corporate notes of undetermined value.*" All the seller wanted to do was sell the truck. I think he would have agreed to any reasonable request unless it would obviously cause him grief. Along with the Bill of Sale, I had prepared a Revocation of Trust, for *him* to sign. This removed the truck from Trusteeship of the State DMV and made it a private automobile again *prior to my purchase*. With the Bill of Sale and Revocation of Trust, the deal was complete. The truck was mine.

I had just sold a house and I had made several purchases of "rolling stock" like cars, trucks, and trailers within a very short time. I removed the license plates from all the units. I found a few plates on the travel trailers that said the plate itself was the property of the state, so I took them off. I bundled up all plates, registrations, revocations of trust, Certificates of Title (unsigned), and registrations and sent them to the state DMV with a certificate of mailing and a cover letter, so that the clerk who opened the envelope would know what was happening. I never received a reply. Obviously, enough other people are doing what I did that Washington State has a *written policy* for the clerks to follow.

The last step in buying the cars was to sell them to the private, Offshore Trust and get a letter of permission or "license" from the Trust to operate any truck, motor home, automobile, motorcycle, boat, or airplane owned by the Trust. I received the "license" in two forms, one is a plastic, laminated card with color photo and the other is a more mundane "letter of permission" from the Trustee.

### THE AUTOMOBILE IDENTIFICATION PLATE

No. You do *not* need plates, but you don't need to be stopped by a cop every few miles either. There are lots of ways to deal with the "problem" of plates. When you drove cars owned by the state, the state identified *its* property with *its* plate. Because you (or a Trust) now own the car, *you* may identify *your* property in *any way you choose*. You may put a piece of plywood the size of a license plate in the place graciously provided by the manufacturer and, because it is your car, paint "MINE" in it. If you have several pieces of rolling stock, you could identify them as "MINE 001," "MINE 002," etc.

In Florida, I saw cars with a piece of stiff, white cardboard and big, red, block letters saying "LICENSE NOT REQUIRED" with a smaller line below with red letters showing the state statutes guaranteeing the right to own property and right to free travel. The piece of cardboard was protected with laminating plastic and bolted onto the car instead of a license plate.

In Montana, some people (they don't even have to be Sovereigns) put fluorescent orange triangles on the backs of their cars. There are no numbers, letters, registrations, or anything, just an orange triangle. Under Montana Statutes these automobiles are privately owned, unregistered "farm" vehicles and may legally use the public thoroughfares. See "Family Automobile Doctrine" in *Black's Law Dictionary*. (I know it's in the fifth edition, not sure about the others.) When the car is owned by the state's Trust, you operate it "*as an agent of the*

*community.*” Use a yellow highlighter to mark the phrase “*agent of the community.*” Some day when you’re feeling ornery and want to watch a city attorney squirm, hand him your “*Black’s*” and ask him to explain what “*agent of the community*” means. Montana’s fluorescent triangle statute was made under the Family Automobile Doctrine.

By far the easiest on the nerves is to place the ownership of the car in an Offshore Trust in some place that has so few roads that automobiles are virtually non-existent, and therefore, are treated like any other form of personal transportation (like shoes). I chose a place where these forms of personal property are not registered by the government. I have a very pretty metal plate with the name of the country on it and a number. It says in fine print across the bottom that the plate is personal property and it is a crime to remove the plate without authorization from the owner. These plates come with a registration card to show who owns the car and plate.

No policeman has ever stopped me just because he did not like the looks of my plate. My *son* was stopped once by a city policeman in a small Washington town. Because we were going to be staying in the vicinity of that town for a few more months, I informed the police chief that we did not own the car; the car was owned by a Trust; we were not residents; we did not intend to become residents; and we would soon be leaving. The Chief said, “*No problem.*” End of story.

A lot of policemen just can’t wait to write you a ticket. Other policemen are sick and tired of the number of citations that they have to issue to raise their daily revenue quota and they are more on your side than you may realize. Be nice to these guys when they stop you. Do not let them trample down your rights, but be polite and wish them well. They have to deal with a lot of ugly things (accidents, rapes, wife beatings, lawyers, etc.) and then have to go home and not let it rub off on their families. Policemen have a tough job. I just wish they worked for an honest employer.

After becoming a Sovereign, I have been stopped several times for “speeding.” The first time was in Washington for doing 79 MPH in a 65-MPH zone. At least that is what the State Patrolman said. I thought I was doing closer to 85. The second time was in Arizona for doing 75 in a 55 zone. The third time was in Mexico for doing thirty MPH over the speed limit.

When the Washington State Patrolman asked for my license and registration, I gave him my International Motorist Qualification and the registration that goes with my plate. He took them back to his car to radio the information to his dispatcher and was back in 6 minutes saying, “*Try to keep the speed down and have a safe trip.*” I told him, “*Thank you, officer, and I wish the same for you.*” I kept the speed down to 70 until I got tired of having cars pass me and then went back up to the speed that everyone else was going.

In Arizona, I was stopped by a county deputy, at night, in a radar trap. He checked my paperwork and let me go. As I pulled back on the road he pulled in behind me and followed me into the next town where I used the coin-operated car wash. While my son was washing the car, the deputy was asking me lots of detailed questions about the plate, the Trust, the issue of Sovereignty, and so forth. He was *really interested*. What an excellent opportunity to share knowledge with another human being! Moreover, this one is in a position to harass, or not harass, Sovereigns. I hope I showed him that we are “nicer persons, not worsers persons” and we would be good people to have in a community.

In Mexico, I was clocked on radar doing eighty MPH in a fifty MPH zone. We slowed down so the Federal Highway Policeman could catch us easily and when he pulled us over I

handed him my International Motorist Qualification. After a short conversation and no bribe, he politely handed back the IMQ and asked me to drive a little slower. He seemed like a nice man.

On a journey from Arizona to Washington and back, my son and I were stopped three times because we only had one tail light. It had not seemed important to us because the brake lights and turn signals worked and we still had one more tail light than many cars on the road in Mexico. My son's IMQ was out-dated. The Utah State Policeman called it "expired." After talking with his dispatcher for about ten minutes, the policeman decided that he had nothing that he could cite my son for so he asked me if I would drive from that point. I have a more recently "issued" IMQ than my son has.

Let's get back on track. I have seen cars without any ID plates at all. I have seen cars with a piece of paper stuck in the window. I have seen orange, fluorescent triangles. I have seen 1/4" plywood and house paint. I have seen "NOT REQUIRED" on white cardboard in laminated plastic. I have seen beautifully made metal plates like mine. Which is the best one for you? It depends on what you drive, where you drive it, and whether or not you have time to "educate" the local police and judicial system. If I lived in Montana, I would most likely use an orange triangle on things that stayed near home and the white cardboard / red letter option on cars I drive from state to state, but then, I rather enjoy talking to people about Sovereignty, policemen included. However, because I do not live in Montana, because I am married and my wife also uses the automobiles, and because my permanent *earthly* home is a boat, I am certainly happy with my decision to use metal plates. I like to travel and I would rather spend my time sailing or helping other people than to spend it in court. All the systems work in direct relation to how well you understand your rights under God's law and the Federal and State Constitutions.

#### IDENTIFICATION

Whenever you have an encounter with law enforcement, government, or bankers, you will be asked for identification. Usually the official will ask for picture ID. I carry a passport and an International Motorist Qualification.

##### **International Motorist Qualification**

One of the best forms of identification is an International Motorist Qualification (IMQ). **Note:** this is *not* a license. It is not *permission* for you to use the car. The IMQ says you are *qualified* to operate the machinery. You get the *license* or *letter of permission* from the owner (the Trust). The IMQ that I have is laminated in plastic and has my color photo, name, permanent address, physical description, etc. and where ever I have shown it, in America or Mexico, it has been accepted without question.

My first attempt to avoid the penalties associated with the Driver's License Application Contract was to place "**Reserving All Common Law Rights as per UCC 1-207**" (**invoking note #6 of UCC 1-103**) above my name on an Alaska Driver's License application. The state license department had been instructed to refuse applications like mine so, guess what. I scratched it out and signed it anyway! What a dumbbell! By refusing to process the application, they were admitting that the state has no jurisdiction over common law usage of the public thoroughfares. I should have asked the clerk if she would write "*refused,*" date stamp and initial the form, and let me take it with me. It would have been as good as a license and would not have cost anything. It would not even have an expiration date! The only thing it could *not* do for me is act as identification.

##### **Passport**

A passport is another good form of identification. A United States passport application asks for a SSN. By carefully filling out the application, remembering that your nationality is

“American” and checking the box that shows that you are *not* a U.S. citizen, you can get a U.S. Passport with no SSN. Remember to insert or over-write a capital “C” on Citizen, and that the nationality of your parents is “American.” The directions say that if you have no SSN, you are to place all zeros in the space provided for the SSN. Follow the directions. It helps if you have a copy of Section 6039(E) of the Internal Revenue Code to show that a TIN, *not SSN*, is required. The perjury statement must also be re-worded according with 28 USC 1746(1), for declarations under penalty of perjury outside the United States and the words “**of America**” added to the perjury statement. The threat of a \$500.00 assessment if you fail to provide a TIN is only valid against US citizens. Sovereigns need not fear. This is one place where you *will* want to add the words, “*with explicit reservation of all common law rights*” above your signature.

There are places one may turn to get a passport *other* than the U. S. Government. The easiest to obtain is from the World Services Authority in Washington, DC. WSA is a private company issuing passports under United Nations regulations. Because it is done under U. N. rules, you need to be very careful which products and services you select from among WSA’s offerings. I have their basic passport with exit visa stamp. Their address is in **Appendix XXI**.

### **Your Bible**

Because Sovereigns do not go to their servant (the state) to obtain permission to be born, marry, procreate, or die, then one of the best forms of identification is our family Bible. Marriages, births, and deaths should be recorded in your Bible. This record of births and deaths is valid in any country in the world. When your children are old enough to be responsible, they should be given a Bible with as many generations of your family’s history as you have records. As many family members as possible should have their own copy of the family tree. Why should we keep records of our family tree when First Timothy 1:4 says not to give heed to endless genealogies? The *only* purpose of keeping the record in the family Bible is to *prove who you are*. Even the United States Passport is *officially* recognized only in the countries that have exchanged ambassadors with the U. S. Your Bible is a contemporaneous record that is accepted worldwide.

### **YOUR BIBLE AS PROOF OF MARRIAGE**

The easiest way to remove the state’s presumption of rights in a marriage is by revocation of signature from the marriage license. Because the marriage license fee has already been paid and we are not asking for a return of the money, no one is going to care if we revoke our signature. *If you void your “marriage license,” are you still married?* Well, let me ask you this: *“If you sign the license and go through the ceremony but never live together as man and wife, are you married?”* There have been court cases in recent years over “marriages of convenience,” which were used to obtain U. S. citizenship for foreign nationals. The courts have invariably ruled that a license and ceremony *do not a marriage make*. Whenever the “married” couple could not *prove* they had also lived together as man and wife, the court has ordered the deportation of the foreigner.

Now, to answer the first question. *Yes*. If you void your marriage license and still live together then you are still man and wife, - a married couple. Read what the Bible says about marriage in **Genesis 2:24** and **I Corinthians 6:16**. Read them both. The New Testament says that when a man sleeps with a woman of ill repute he has made her his wife. What we saw in the previous paragraph and in the Bible is exactly the same thing. Living with someone means that you are married to them.

The word for “**married**” in Mexico is “**en casado (con).**” For those who do not understand Spanish, “**en**” means “*in*,” a “**casa**” is a “*house*,” “**con**” means “*with*” and the suffix “**ado**” makes it *past tense*, an accomplished fact. A *literal* translation of “**Maria es encasado con Fredrico**” would be, “Mary is *housed* with Fred.” What it *means* is “Mary is *married* to Fred.” Therefore, it is easy to see that living in the same house with someone is marriage, at least in Spanish speaking countries. It is actually the same the world over. I think that the only, and I mean *ONLY*, reason that Americans believe it is necessary to run to their servant (the government) for written permission to be married is because ministers in incorporated churches have coerced them. Our ancestors recorded their marriages in the family Bible. If it was good enough for them, it should be good enough for us. Having your own record of your family’s marriages will also mean that you can prove that there is no miscegenation. That there is no license needed for an “intermarriage.”

Morally, having this knowledge is both a blessing and a curse; a freedom and a responsibility; liberating and binding. We do not need to ask permission from or register our marriage with anyone, but we are married for life with anyone with whom we “live with,” so to speak. Just because we are free does *not* mean that we may indulge in what the Hippies called “free love.”

#### OTHER LICENSES

If you have applied for various licenses, like a Ham radio license, business license, or professional license that you wish to discontinue, the recommended way of dealing with it is to revoke your signature from the application. If you merely drop the license and do not re-apply, you *may* be leaving the presumption in place that you are still under a legal disability that would require you to obtain permission. You could argue (in court) that the application only covered the period of time until the licenses expired and most likely prevail in a common law court. However, in the government’s “Roman Civil Law” or “Martial Law” courts you might lose. If you feel it is not worth the bother to go back through your life and revoke a hundred and fifty signatures (I sympathize with you) and depend on your new status as a Sovereign for protection, then you are most likely safe. *Don’t forget to pray.* After all, if you have entered God’s jurisdiction, then you have more *protection* than the government has *weapons*.

#### SECURITY OF VALUABLES AND INVESTMENTS

We have already discussed the contractual implications involved in the use of FRN’s. We discussed how you could not buy something by trading something for it that you do not own. A Sovereign is going to keep the largest portion of his money reserve (savings) in gold, silver, or precious stones. I avoid gemstones because of the difficulty in finding a highly rated appraiser to fix the value of them. I do not question that gemstones are a good investment, but I am personally not qualified to deal with them. Gold and silver, preferably in coin or round bullion, are by far the most recognizable and most stable way to save money. If you buy gold or silver *bars*, you must pay to have them assayed whenever you buy or sell, thus reducing your profit and slowing the transaction time.

**Mark Korenke** (AKA: “Mark from Michigan”), recommended having a good sized stash of any kind of coin, even clad coin like the copper-washed, zinc pennies, and white metal covered dimes, quarters, halves, and Susan B. Anthony dollars. I will *not* recommend this because I have spent quite a bit of time in Mexico and I have seen coffee cans and even *buckets* of old Mexican coins that are so worthless it is not even worth the trouble to take them to the bank. If the coins had been made of something that had intrinsic value, they could have been melted and sold. As it is, some of the old Mexican coins are being used by the U. S. Mint as a

core around which to crimp U. S. coin faces. I know they are doing it because I have seen one of those coins. Mark Koerke based his recommendation on the devaluation of currency in Israel. I base my recommendation on what I have seen in Mexico. I believe that the International Bankers learned something between the time when they devalued Israel's money and when they devalued Mexico's money. It does not hurt anybody to keep a few coins around, but your primary savings still need to be in gold or silver.

As Strategic Withdrawal II is going to press, the price of gold seems to have bottomed out and is beginning to rise. Does that mean gold is no longer a good investment? I do not think so. I think Russia is dumping vast amounts of their gold reserve on the market and the House of Rothschild (where the price of gold is fixed for the entire world) is manipulating the price to make the world situation appear better than it actually is. Now is still the time to buy.

As your wealth grows, you will become concerned with security. The words "self reliance" may be used to describe your course of action, but it is really reliance on God and not relying on government. This goes with Sovereignty. Be glad you are not worried about poverty!

### INSURANCE

When we walk into an insurance office, we are walking into an alter ego of a bank. Some of the insurance companies are even *more* wealthy and powerful than banks. The boardrooms of the insurance companies are graced with the same names and faces that appear in the largest banks, oil companies, and manufacturing companies. Insurance forms will always have a space for your SSN. If you give them a SSN, you are back in the same trap that you just escaped from with the banks. We may not fill out an insurance form, so what may a Sovereign do for insurance?

Insurance is a means of offsetting a catastrophic loss. It is not intended to defray normal expenses. Two hundred years ago many communities had what was called a "Community Chest." Today, the only time we hear the term "Community Chest" is when we are playing the Parker Brothers board game, "Monopoly®." The concept of a Community Chest is still being used in the Near East and much of the third world. During good years, the people donate some of their excess substance (money, food, baskets, etc.) to the Community Chest. In case of catastrophic loss, the person may draw as much as he needs out of the Community Chest to get back on his feet.

A Yugoslavian, whose family is the traditional keeper of their Community's Chest, introduced me to the Community Chest concept. *Who* or *what organization* is in charge of keeping the Community Chest varies with the culture. Sometimes a church is in charge. Sometimes the local village council is in charge. Sometimes the job traditionally belongs to a fraternal organization. In any event, there is community oversight over who puts money in and who may take money out. Part of the power of controlling antisocial behavior (i.e., - vandalism) is that a person who is found guilty of this kind of crime might not be allowed to depend upon the Community Chest if he falls upon hard times. A family is thought of as wealthy if they never have to depend upon the Community Chest for their needs.

If we think we must buy insurance just because Hillary Clinton thinks we need it, then we should examine our motivation. Do we have enough money to cover the cost of a major accident? What can we do to avoid having the accident in the first place? Read Psalms 91 and think about what is important to you.

If we decide that we absolutely *must* have some type of *health* insurance, we may use our offshore Trust to buy it *for* us. A legitimate function of a Trust is to look out for the welfare

---

of its officers and beneficiaries. Because the Trust *has* no SSN or EIN, the Trust may contract with the insurance company without claiming a government benefit.

### **Automobile Insurance**

What do you do when a policeman stops you and asks you for proof of insurance? In the first place, if you have foreign plates, he will not ask. He is out there on the highway to collect revenue from the slaves in *his* jurisdiction. Whenever I get into the car I always pray for God to “... *blind the enemy to my comings and goings and doings, to bar him from my path and from my door, and to bless and protect me and those dependent upon me.*” No policeman has ever asked me to produce proof of insurance. If I *were* asked for proof of insurance, I would hand the cop my Bible, opened to Psalms 91. If he would not take the Bible, I would read Psalms 91 to him. All the insurance companies in the world cannot prevent someone from getting in an accident. I will trust God to *prevent* a problem rather than fight with an insurance corporation for reimbursement for damages *after* an accident. Because an insurance policy is a *contract*, then you cannot be coerced to enter into an agreement with them, and your substantive rights cannot be taken from you by refusing.

The best and most confidence giving form of earthly auto insurance is the “**Certificate of Financial Responsibility.**” This is a document that can be issued by a competent financial service association that certifies that you have on deposit at least the minimum amount stipulated by the state DMV. You do NOT register this with any state agency, you merely keep copies of that Certificate of Financial Responsibility in all of your autos. In case of an accident, you show the certificate and then call the Financial Services provider for further instructions. The usual procedure is for them to post some kind of bond until there is either a settlement or a common-law determination of the amount of liability.

### **Medical Insurance**

People buy medical insurance to help offset Doctor and Hospital bills in case of injury or illness. Since most modern illnesses appear to be degenerative diseases (which are the result of poor diet or bad habits) then changing our lifestyle could eliminate most of our medical expenses. If we retrain ourselves and train our children to think in terms of making *specific* investments for the *specific* purpose of using that income *only* in case of medical emergency, it would go a long way to replacing our dependency upon medical insurance. Another thing we can do is think of the potential medical expenses involved *before* buying something like an ATV or dirt bike. Before buying the ATV, did you think about how much it will cost to patch up a broken bone? Prevention is better than cure.

We need to spend as much time learning how to become healthier as we do wealthier. We need to study about exercise, vitamins, minerals, protein, fats, and carbohydrates and where we can find the best sources for these nutrients. We need to learn about basic home health care. We can avoid most (if not all) medical expenses by using our brain before using our checkbook.

### **REAL ESTATE**

What do we do about real estate? This is a knotty problem that has several “experts” giving their opinions on it. When I deal with an unusual situation in mathematics, I simplify the equation and reduce things to their lowest common denominator. That is the way to approach real estate purchases. We need to analyze how that piece of real estate was added to the tax roles and what current laws are in effect that allow the removal of the land from the tax roles. Land usually becomes taxable when it is donated to the government (in Trust) for use as collateral on the national debt. We need to withdraw that piece of real estate from that Trust.

All government jurisdictions have certain use and occupation classes that are recognized as tax *exempt*. Many educational and pure-science research facilities are tax exempt. Most jurisdictions will also recognize land belonging to churches and religious societies as being tax *immune*. Because I do not currently own real estate, I will not attempt to pass myself off as a living *expert*, but I *will* offer several ways of *enjoying the benefits* of freehold title to land. These methods will require varying degrees of resolve to force the government to live up to its charter. Method 1 has worked on many occasions. Method 5 has worked on thousands of occasions. The others have worked in the past and should work in the future, but it may not be easy.

### Method 1 – Revocation Of Trust

If your state has no stipulated procedure for land, you revoke government trusteeship over your land in a manner similar to the way you revoked government trusteeship over your automobile. After revocation of trusteeship, you notify the county tax collector that the real estate is to be removed from the tax rolls. A good Citizen of Texas Republic (who deserves his privacy) has successfully used this method to become the true owner of his land. He even forced the IRS agents to remove a “Notice of federal tax lien” that they had filed against the land. Sovereign Citizens of *several* states have used this simple method to preserve their land for their posterity. Your Constructive Notice to the County Auditor would include a reference to the “corruption of blood” clause in the Constitution. Then you may sell the real estate to your Trust or Church with a fee simple title and bill of sale.

### Method 2 – Research

Using this method to deal with real estate, you are searching for the original land grant, freehold title, land patent, or allodial title. The original land grant has the same relationship to land as a *manufacturer’s certificate of origin* has to an automobile. If there *ever was* an allodial title, you need to do active research into exactly who, what, when, where, how, and why the allodial title for your land was changed into something else. The “something else” might be called a *Statutory Warranted Deed* or *Deed Of Trust*. Your research ends when you discover how allodial title was lost because then you know how to regain it.

Most states have adopted variations of the Torrens Act. This is an Australian form of land registration invented by a British aristocrat named Sir Richard Torrens. In Washington State, the Torrens Act is codified in Title 65.12.220 through .245. The first line of the act describes it as “*an agreement*,” which we have learned is the definition of a contract. The agreement is that you are giving the County (political puppet of the federal government) the custody of proof of title for your land and in return, you do not have to worry about the security of the title against fire, flood, or tornado. In exchange for this security, the county is authorized to levy taxes against you and to offer your land as security against the National Debt. The remedy in Washington State law is agreed to when initially entering the title into the Torrens Title System. There is *no way* to remove the land *other* than by following the simple procedure that is stipulated. All attempts at removal of your land from the state through other methods or citing other acts or laws are going to fail. By presenting, the three, simple pieces of paper that they demand, you receive the title for the land in “fee simple” which is another way of saying allodial title.

In states where there is no way that is *stipulated* for land to be removed from under the Torrens Title System, remedying the problem should usually require little more than Revocation of Power of Appointment, references to your state’s Constitution providing that all political

power is inherent in the people, the constitutional provision against state irrevocable trusts (if any), and your notarized Signature

The best people to hire to do the research are Title Insurance Companies. Even if they do not have their own records, they know the quickest way to research titles in your county's land records. On the wall in the courthouse in Adams County, Washington, there is a big map of the county and the names of the original freehold landowners in the county. If there were freehold titles in Adams, then there were freehold titles in all Counties in Washington. It is a matter of researching previous ownership of your land until you find the last freeholder. Whatever the last freeholder did that gave the land to the government, you find a way to undo it. If you are not receiving any cooperation from your County officials, you will finish this process with a court action called "**Quiet Title Action.**" If you have done your research well, there should be no opposition in your quiet title action. *Good luck and happy hunting!*

### **Method 3 - Take 'em to Court and sue their socks off!**

Some states, like Wisconsin, *claim* that they were never given the allodial titles to the land by the federal government when they became Sovereign States. Therefore, the government claims that it is not possible to have a freehold, allodial title to land in those states. Because our object is to be able to do as we wish on our own land, the next two avenues are open to us in states like Wisconsin.

In 1989, there was a lawsuit named **Utah Division of Public Lands v. United States** wherein the State of Utah sued for ownership of a piece of ground under the "equal footing doctrine." The State of Utah won that suit in the supreme Court. This suit provided one of the foundations for Dick Carver's "**Nye County Plan,**" which President Clinton refers to as the "**Sage Brush Rebellion.**" Carver is on rock solid ground because the equal footing doctrine says that all newly admitted states will be admitted on an *equal footing* with the original thirteen states. *All* of the Citizens of *all thirteen* original states had freehold, allodial title to their land. It is a violation of the equal footing doctrine to refuse to convey allodial title to all public lands to the new state when granting Statehood. Engagements entered into under the Articles of Confederation are binding upon the United States. Equal footing was an "*engagement entered into*" with the States under the Articles of Confederation [Article VI, Constitution for united States].

Dick Carver went even further in his research and found where allodial title had actually been transferred to Nevada and the other Southwestern States before they were stolen back by the federal government. The Globalists accomplished this by the unconstitutional "end run" around the rights of the Sovereign State of Nevada by using the "Buck Act." The Buck Act was passed in 1940 while all American's eyes were on the threat from abroad and not suspecting that anyone in our government would commit such an outrageous act of treason. The Buck Act is found in U. S. Codes between **Title 4 USC § 105 and § 113**. The effect of the Buck Act is to allow any federal agency to draw boundaries *within the geographical boundaries of a Sovereign State* and thereby turn everyone in the state into federal citizens. Because bureaucrats do the re-drawing of the boundaries, this is the ultimate "**Bill of Attainder!**" Incidentally, most of the early lawsuits that invoked the Buck Act were *revenue suits*. Surprised? Neither am I.

The Militia of Montana has an excellent packet of information and videos featuring Dick Carver. The package contains a hard-copy of all the laws that Mr. Carver relied upon to succeed in kicking the federal goon squads out of Nye County, Nevada. Nye County now collects the grazing fees from ranchers using public lands. Nye County also collects the mineral royalties

from Round Mountain Gold mine! All of the money stays in Nye County. To get this package from M.O.M., call them and ask *David Trochman* for the “**Idaho Land Conference Package.**”

The kind of lawsuit you would have to initiate for this kind of title to your land would also be a “**Quiet Title Action,**” but would be much more detailed than an action where someone within the last hundred years had held allodial title. If you want to or need to use **Method 3** to get your allodial title, prepare to get real dirty and spend a lot of money.

#### **Method 4 - Common Law Rights**

An easy way to avoid land rents (taxes) and building codes is to buy the land at a government “**cash only**” sale. Take a box of silver dollars and bid twenty-one *silver* dollars on everything that looks good to you. You need to read the “conditions of sale” provisions very carefully to make sure this procedure will work. If any other bidder tries to pay with a check, you will win the bid because you have cash. If you have honest people working for your county, your silver dollars should outrank FRN’s, too, because FRN’s are not now and never have been anything but corporate debt instruments issued under **UCC 3-104(2)(d)**. When you win the bid, make sure that your receipt accurately describes the property (not by tax lot number or street address), that it clearly states your consideration tendered is twenty-one Silver Dollars (written that way), and then *leave immediately*. **DON’T SIGN ANYTHING**, especially if it looks like a **tax affidavit** or an **application for a deed**. One idea is to send someone other than yourself to pick up the receipt. Make sure that they understand that the description of the property and twenty-one silver dollars must be on the receipt, but they *do not* have your authority to *sign* anything for you, *especially* a tax affidavit or an application for a deed. They *will* agree to pass along a message that the county wants you to sign something. Your *proof* that you own the property is in the *government receipt*, which is a legal **Bill of Sale**. **YOU DON’T NEED ANYTHING ELSE**. You could alternately choose to finish up with a Quiet Title Action.

The government may make some threats if you refuse to sign their papers, but keep in mind that you cannot be forced to sign a contract. If a government agency attempts to coerce you into signing an application for a deed, a tax affidavit, etc. you might decide to initiate a lawsuit in District Court of the United States for deprivation of rights. The county would be looking at an expense of over \$350,000.00 to defend themselves, so they may even offer you a cash settlement out of court to get you to drop the suit and live peacefully on your own land. What a switch! As a state slave, you paid them to live on the land. As a Sovereign who is not afraid to sue their socks off for deprivation of rights, *they pay you* to live on the land!

Because you gave the required seventh amendment amount exceeding twenty dollars, your common law remedies are assured in event of a tax controversy or assertion of building code violations. Because they are not going to take you into a common law court, how would they press their claim?

#### **Method 5 – Church, Religious Society, School, or Research Facility**

Using a Corporation Sole, you may remove your property from the tax roles and make the property tax immune, rather than tax exempt. The first amendment makes Mortmain Acts illegal. The state cannot prevent donations of land to churches under *any* condition. If you choose this method, I recommend that you not attempt to identify the use of the property as anything other than what it actually is. If you are not using the property as a church, do not identify it as a church. A *religious society* is just as tax immune as a church and the documents may be more flexibly worded. If you “home-school” your children or grandchildren, then a religious society that specializes in education could be one of your choices. A Naturopath could describe his operation as a healing ministry and accept donations. The exact procedure for

creating and operating a Corporation Sole varies from state to state and is discussed in the next chapter.

### **Building Permits**

Building permits can be dealt with easily if you have “fee simple” title for your land or if you paid for your land with at least twenty-one silver dollars (so you are under common law) or if you have allodial title. The way you deal with them is to simply *ignore them*. How are they going to prosecute? Take you to court? Where is their contract? Who gave them permission? Read about “Writ of Quo Warranto” in Black’s Law Dictionary and other sources.

### **SUMMARY**

We have discussed many of the contracts that we must vacate in order to become Sovereign, but not all of them. Please do not forget that any piece of paper in the government hands that has your signature and identifies you as being a U.S. citizen/subject is sufficient to give the government a reason for giving you grief. You may rescind your SSN, but if you retain your voter registration card, you are not a sovereign. The situation is similar to the situation discussed in **James 2:10-13**.

If, *after* carefully following the procedures to achieve Sovereignty and systematically canceling all your contracts and giving up all government benefits, you *still* find yourself being threatened, intimidated, and harassed by bureaucrats, then you need very carefully to go over what you have done. What government benefit is it that you couldn’t live without? None? Did you get talked into using a SSN to go to a medical facility? Take some College courses? Apply for an insurance policy? Still confident that you got them all? OK. Then maybe the problem is that you forgot to ask God to accept you into His jurisdiction. God made the rules and when you have recognized Him as the *Supreme* Sovereign, your King, His contract (the Bible) says that He *will* protect you. He says those who trust in Him will not be ashamed. Can you imagine what would happen to God’s jurisdiction if He allowed all kinds of false gods to grab a piece of the Citizens of His jurisdiction? It wouldn’t take very long for God to have no jurisdiction left, would it? *Well, it ain’t happened yet an’ it ain’t a-gonna happen, neither!*

An interesting way to look at why the earthly governments are leaving us alone is to compare it to the jurisdictions of States. If a person can get a license to drive in Idaho at the age of fourteen and the kids in Washington can’t get a license until they are sixteen, then why don’t the Washington State Patrolmen write tickets on all of those under-aged Idaho drivers the minute they cross the state line into Washington? The WSP is not *allowed* to write tickets on fourteen year old Idaho drivers while they are in Washington. This is because Americans are covered by the common law of the State in which they were born as well as the laws of the particular state in which they sojourn.

If we violate the common law, we will have to go to a common law court and face the music. Because we have no contracts with governments or with corporations then we are not subject to their statutes. They are not interested in us any more than a WSP is interested in a fifteen year old farm boy from Spirit Lake, Idaho driving his father’s pickup truck to a high school football game in Elk, Washington.

One of the reasons we will *never* be taken to court by the IRS or Social Security when we cite our **State Statute on Release of Appointment** in our affidavit (and follow the other guidelines as well) is because State law has the effect of **Stare Decisis** in federal court. Check out **28 USC § 1652** and **Rules of Evidence, Rule 302**. Because our State’s statute on **Release of Appointment** has the same effect as a settled supreme Court decision, there would be absolutely no point in the IRS taking us to court. *We have already won!*

---

Part of our assurance comes from a more mundane source. Have you ever gone into a government building and stood in line for an hour to see some bureaucrat, only to find you have failed to bring one or two of the forms that *they think* you should have? All of a sudden, they just can't see you. They look right through you and say "*Next.*" If you don't have a SSN, you have shut down ALL government contracts, and you never apply for government benefits, then there is no reason why any piece of paper with your name on it should ever cross a bureaucrat's desk. Don't virtually ALL government jobs consist of processing and/or tracking applications for *benefits*? If you don't have a number and the bureaucrat never sees your name, how is he ever going to cause you any grief? He can't! You are free! Lawyers, accountants, judges, and many high-ranking bureaucrats have examined the principles outlined in this book over the last fifteen years. The principles are rock solid. I speak from personal experience when I say that they have also been thoroughly "use-tested."

---

*"One must bear in mind that the expansion of federal activity is a form of eating for politicians."* — William F. Buckley, Jr., National Review, September 8, 1964

---

**"It would have been impossible for us to develop our plan for the world if we had been subject to the bright lights of publicity during those years. But we are now prepared to march towards a world government. The super-national sovereignty of an Intellectual Elite and World Bankers is surely preferable to the national auto-determination practiced in past centuries." — David Rockefeller (1991)**

---

**"The few who understand the system will either be so interested in its profits, or so dependent on its favors, that there will be no opposition from that class. The great body of people, mentally incapable of comprehending the tremendous advantages, will bear its burden without complaint." — Descendants of Baron Nathan Rothschild, at a meeting in the Bank of England (1863)**

---

## 15 — Dealing with Debt

Exodus 12:35-36; Revelations 18:4-7

Because the author presumes that all persons reading Strategic Withdrawal are of sound mind and of pure heart, the author presumes that the vast majority of the readers will recoil in horror at the thought of bankruptcy or not “paying” their bills. In this upside-down financial climate, not everything is what it seems. When the bankers “create” *imaginary* money and then charge *real interest* on their *fantasy*, this is **not** an obligation that must always be fulfilled according to the customary rules. There are ways to cancel that *presumed* obligation that are legal and ethical. This chapter is written for the purpose of showing the reader not only how to cancel bank debt, but explain in detail, not *how*, but *why* bankruptcy, credit card crashing, and forcing banks to “zero-balance” a loan may be the most moral and patriotic way of dealing with the bankers *and*, - that God has *ordered* us to do this.

In an Army leadership school, I was told that the American soldier is the most aggressive fighting man on earth, as long as you give him a *reason* to fight. In the Army, we were given political reasons for fighting and told that they were worthy objectives. The reasons being given *here* are for health, wealth, and welfare of your family and your community, as well as acts of obedience toward God. Unless a soldier has a reason to risk his life, he is not going to get out of his foxhole. We are going to give you a reason for giving the debt created by the banker right back to the banker. We will also give you some addresses where you can find help in dealing with bankers that do not want to accept their own debt.

Unless the reader understands the reasons for (and the rightness of) crashing bank cards, zeroing out bank loans, and declaring bankruptcy, *when a bank or the government is the only “creditor,”* then the reader will continue funding the tyranny by the bankers over their own families. The author is not being judgmental or derogatory in any way toward those who continue to fund the bankers. Those persons are acting out of their best understanding of what is right and wrong. Those readers will live far below the level of prosperity at which God has blessed them and wonder why they work so hard and earn so little. That which is stated on page thirty seven of Strategic Withdrawal, when dealing with courts and a change of behavior, applies equally when dealing with banks and debt. When we are in debt, it is because of what WE have done. We cannot change the world and we certainly cannot change the bankers, but we can change our own behavior. If we make the correct changes in behavior, our debt disappears, our slavery disappears, and Liberty *appears!*

Please read and understand the above passages from the bible. God did not intend for the Israelites to leave Egypt empty handed. God also intends for the present day Christians to leave the clutches of the present government/bankster systems with all of *their back pay* in their back pockets. In the process of leaving the system, the directions are plain that WE are to return unto her (earthly tyrants) *double* for all of the misery that they have caused us. If the loss of many thousands of hours of our labor per year has cause us misery, then we must multiply that misery back to the money masters and their bungling bureaucratic bozos.

What we call “money” is actually a measurement of our time. Currently, Americans are paying about two thirds of their labor for direct or hidden taxes and/or interest on bank loans. A simple way of figuring how much the bankers/bureaucrats owe you is to calculate how much you earn per year multiplied by how many years you have been gainfully employed and multiply

by two thirds. When you leave the system, be prepared to take *twice* that much with you. Remember the bible verses for this chapter? Return unto her *double*. God said it.

When God says that He will do something for us, we must wait on Him and be in the proper position in which to receive the blessing. When we try to do the job ourselves, then we are trying to place ourselves *before* God (like Nimrod). When God tells *us* to do something, then we can wait forever and He will still not do it *for* us. God says that *He* did His job by providing the way of reconciliation for us. He tells us that *we* will be doing our job when we "*return unto her double*." When the IRS (Individuals Representing Satan) have seized \$80,000.00 in real estate and labor from us, then God will provide a way for us to take away \$160,000 in real estate and labor. But we must do it for ourselves. God will not do it for us. God's job at this point is to protect us in our acts of obedience.

If the reader strongly disagrees with the author's interpretation of the above passages, then let him read no further in this chapter, for this chapter will share some of the ways you may "crash" credit cards and force the banks to return a "zero-balance" on all of your loans. *You* will get to keep everything for which *you* have worked and *return the created debt to the bankers*. The bankers created the debt, and as the creator, the debt rightfully belongs to them.

What we will learn in this chapter is *how*, *when*, and *why* it is right and good for Americans to crash credit cards, zero out loans, and declare bankruptcy. The "*how*" relates to paperwork. The "*when*" relates to how *not* to hurt a vendor or a Citizen, but *ONLY* effect the banks. The "*why*" relates to the justifiable reasons for "*returning to her double*."

#### DEFINING THE PROBLEM

"Check kiting" is a kind of bank fraud. An example of check kiting is when one writes two - one million dollar checks at the same time. One on a Tucson account to an account in Phoenix and one on the Phoenix bank made out to the bank in Tucson. Interest is paid from the day that both checks are deposited until the day that the checks clear. Interest is paid on two million dollars for two or three days when there is actually *no* money in *either* bank. If you can kite enough checks and earn enough interest on enough millions of dollars, then you would eventually become wealthy. The banks have reduced check kiting to an art form and call it "making loans".

In 1985, E. F. Hutton was in the news for floating about \$270,000,000.00 dollars worth of bad checks *each day* in what is, up until now, the largest check-kiting scheme that has ever been exposed. E. F. Hutton never used the principle out of the accounts, but kept the checks in perpetual circulation. They made about \$25 *million* dollars in one year through this fraud, and the justice department could not seem to find anyone to indict!!! If it was a small businessman or a professional, don't you think that they would find someone to put in jail? Your local banker [good church member, Rotary Club Member, and Member of the Benevolent and Protective Order of the Elks] is doing this to you on a regular basis and yet some people feel obligated to support him! The only way that the bankers have made their check kiting scheme work is because they are in a very unique position to keep the checks circulating to cover their crimes.

When you get a "loan" from a bank to buy a car, the first thing they do is get you to sign a promissory note for the amount of the loan. They then deposit *your own promissory note* [category UCC 3-104(2)(d) negotiable instrument] into your checking account. In effect, you are paying off the *entire loan, before* you take the bank draft [category UCC 3-104(2)(a) negotiable instrument] to the car dealer for the car. As time goes by, they accept your checks [category UCC 3-104(2)(b) negotiable instruments] when you pay off the loan the *second* time.

The bank carries your promissory note on their books as a **credit**. If you have taken *all* of the amount of the loan from the bank (as when you buy a car), then your loan account is **debited** when you write the check at the car dealer. Because the entire promissory note is *still there* (no one tore a corner off of it!) then the **entire credit** side is *still on the books!* Because you are on the books with **both** a **credit** and a **debit**, the bank may exercise what is called an "offset" at any time without costing themselves a single dime. The *plus* offsets the *minus* and the bank should (theoretically) be happy. What they are looking for, however, is the monthly income from the principal and interest that serves to enrich them without any risk on their part. No risk, that is, other than someone like myself that will encourage you to cancel their debt and keep your car (boat, house, etc).

The simple trick that the bankers pull on their own clients violates so many laws that they cannot be counted on both hands. For complete understanding of each of the crimes that are mentioned, please consult Black's Law Dictionary. A short list of the crimes would include: unjust enrichment, fraud in the inducement, fraud by silence, check kiting, unfair credit reporting, unfair competition, failure of full disclosure of credit terms, and so many other kinds of credit fraud under the Uniform Consumer Credit Code that we could take up the rest of the page trying to list them. I am going to depart from the usual form of allowing the reader to look up all definitions for themselves, and include the Black's Law Dictionary definition of Truth-in-Lending Act.

**"Truth-in-Lending Act.** The purpose of the Truth-in-Lending Act (15 USCA § 1601 et seq.) is to assure that every customer who has need for commercial credit is given meaningful information with respect to the cost of that credit. In most cases the credit cost must be expressed in the dollar amount of finance charges, and as an annual percentage rate computed on the unpaid balance of the amount financed. Other relevant credit information must also be disclosed so that the customer may compare the various credit terms available to him from different sources and avoid the uninformed use of credit. The Act further provides a customer the right, in certain circumstances, to cancel a credit transaction which involves a lien on his residence. The Truth-in-Lending Act was amended in 1970 to regulate the issuance, holder's liability, and fraudulent use of credit cards. See also **Consumer Credit Protection Act; Regulation Z; Uniform Consumer Credit Code.**" [Black's Law Dictionary, Fifth Edition]

When you have paid off the loan in advance of the bank ever putting any bookkeeping entries on the positive side of your account, don't you think that might be a violation of the Truth-in-Lending Act? When both the positive and negative sides of the ledger are equal and this fact is not reported to you, don't you think that might be a violation of the Truth in Lending Act? When they place a lien against your property (house, car, etc) when both sides of the books already are in balance, don't you think that you might have a right to cancel that lien?

You were informed in the foreword, that all of the procedures in this book are legal. By merely reading the description of the Truth in Lending Act, you can see that no illegal procedure is being advocated between these pages. Because the banks have perpetuated a fraud upon you, you may cancel all of your loans, and keep all of the merchandise that was purchased with the loan.

#### WHO GETS HURT?

Some nice people will think *"I don't want to be known in the community as a person that doesn't pay his bills."* And those persons will continue to double-pay the bankers for the alleged debt, hurting their families. By continuing to pay the bankers, they are funding the

bank's enslavement of their own grandchildren. These nice people have felt so much pain in their lives that they don't want to hurt their friend that sold them their car or the nice man in that bank (a member of his church, even) that loaned them the double-debt for the car or house. The motivation and compassion is admirable, but these people will perish for lack of knowledge.

This process does not hurt the car dealer. When we cancel the loan, the car dealer has already been paid for the car. The bank is not going to demand that the car dealer give back the money. The bank is without recourse against the car dealer.

The process doesn't hurt the bank, because all the bank is doing is wearing a little less lead off of their pencil due to the shortened time of the "loan." They are not unjustly enriched as much as they wish, however, and *you* cease to be their slave. The banks are saved the expense of taking you to court to evict you and re-possess the house or car because they know that you will present evidence of their many kinds of fraud. Virtually all that happens, here, is positively good. The car dealer sells a car. You get a new car. The bankers get exposed as criminals, and they don't have to work so hard. *What can be wrong with that???*

The processes shown by Tom Schauf and Conrad LeBeau have been working for many years and the bankers continue to cancel the loans. The bankers stay in business, so Tom and Conrad's books can't be hurting them. If the banks were to take people to court, the fraud would be exposed in front of the court room full of people. When a banker is forced to explain the fraud under oath, in front of a courtroom full of people then there would be a run on the bank. Offsetting your "loan" or merely canceling your credit card "debt" is a small price for the banks to pay for keeping the fraud going. Zero-balancing an occasional loan is just "*the cost of doing business*" for the bankers. The above-mentioned books, and where to get them, are listed in the **Appendix XVI**. In keeping with the philosophy of *Strategic Withdrawal*, we are only giving you the solid reasons for doing the actions and leaving a little bit of groundwork for you to do for yourself. If you intend to use these procedures, you must verify certain things for yourself. If you depend upon others too much, you aren't looking for assistance as much as for an accomplice.

An added benefit is, - once you do this to a bank, you will never be able to get another loan again, because the credit bureaus will have your file marked with permanent Magic Marker! That is why you must max out your cards *before* you send them in. Let the Egyptians pay for your journey! [Exodus 12:35-36]. Proverbs 22:7 says that the borrower is the slave of the lender. When the banks don't loan you money, they are helping you remain free! Thank them for it.

Now that we understand that nobody gets hurt in this procedure, let us proceed, with vigor.

### CREDIT CARDS

Let's start with the easy one. Credit cards are unsecured debt, like bank debentures. No one has ever come out ahead on unsecured debt except the bankers, *and the people that have learned how to crash credit cards*. When Doctors and businessmen are enticed into investing in a bank debenture, they virtually always lose, because the bankers are the masters of the game and the investor has no security, whatsoever. Giving money to a bank debenture program is the same thing as giving them a gift, because there is absolutely no requirement for them to pay anything.

When the bank issues you an unsecured credit card, they are risking the same percent as the Doctor or businessman in a bank debenture program. They are literally *giving* you the credit and depending upon your gullibility to pay back three or four times as much as you "borrowed."

They are depending upon you to keep a balance of several thousand dollars in revolving "credit" and paying hundreds of dollars of interest on credit that they have manufactured out of thin air. The bank does not loan you anything of value. They don't even pay anything of value to the storekeeper from whom you purchased your goods. They make a few bookkeeping entries and collect interest on bookkeeping entries that were created by and for themselves.

#### Who gets hurt when you crash a card?

The *storekeeper* does not get hurt in this procedure. The banker has already made the bookkeeping entries for the storekeeper so the storekeeper is always glad to see you.

*You* don't get hurt because the bank doesn't prosecute you and you have everything that you got from the storekeeper. You could hurt yourself, by using the credit for acquiring worthless goods or services, but the banker will not hurt you. Before the banker could take anything from you, he would have to show the court where you had pledged your property as collateral against the card. The banker can't do that, so he blusters for a couple of months, writes a few nasty letters, and then quits bothering you.

The *banker* doesn't get hurt. If you have had the credit card for a few years, then you have paid an outrageous amount of principle and interest and the banker will have placed the entire amount into the coffers of the bank. Because the bank has created the entire line of credit out of thin air, not by using the deposits of other bank clients, the banker has defrauded you, the other bank clients, and the storekeeper. The best evidence that the bankers are not being hurt by crashed credit cards is the willingness with which they issue credit cards to unemployed college students. These students are being trained to accept massive amounts of debt, but a very high number of those cards end up being turned in with massive amounts of debt outstanding. Year after year, the bankers consider it a good investment to "lose money" on these cards issued to college kids. Why is it good business? It is because they risk nothing. All they are doing is rearranging bookkeeping entries and it makes no practical difference where they put the figures.

#### Who benefits by crashing a credit card?

OK, I'll admit that *you* benefit. That is obvious, right? But who else benefits?

The local *storekeeper* benefits because he moves merchandise that would have otherwise sat on his shelf. When you have a credit card with a \$10,000.00 line of credit that you feel honor bound to pay off before you declare Sovereignty, the merchants in your town will not move \$10,000.00 worth of goods that you could have purchased. By maxing out the card, you benefit the merchants by \$10,000.00.

The *banker* benefits from the crash, also. A certain number of incidental losses are always acceptable. Some of their "bad debt" credit cards are planned by the bankers for their friends. During Jimmy Carter's regime as president, it was made public that Cyrus Vance had been given massive (million dollar) loans by Atlanta banks and had not been expected to pay them back. The bankers were making the conscientious credit card holder pay Cyrus Vance's bad debts. In addition to all this, the banks are allowed to write the "crashed credit card" off on their income taxes!

Furthermore, the *entire nation* benefits, because instead of disappearing back into the bank, all of the funds remain in circulation. The merchant buys more goods. His suppliers buy more goods. If the funds had been paid to the bank, it would have just *disappeared*. When the wealth stays in circulation the wealth of the nation is improved. When the money is withdrawn from circulation (paid into the bank, *with interest*), its usage by the public stops right there and the nation is impoverished.

---

## BANK LOANS

Bank loans can be much more complicated to arrange than getting a credit card. The first thing that you have to do is prove that you don't need the money! You can be issued a credit card through a mail-in application form, but loans require that you talk with a bank's loan closer.

The first thing we need to understand is the *substance* of money. We already know that money is a way to measure our time. So, money is used to *measure* time, but what is its *substance*? The reason that metallic, coin made from precious metals, is used for money is because of the tremendous amount of time needed to win the gold and silver from the earth and turn it into coins. Merely changing the number on the face of a coin from \$20 to \$50 does not change the *weight* of the coin. A gold coin that weighs one-fourth ounce is worth about one quarter of the value of a one-ounce coin. The value of the gold coin is in direct relation to the amount of labor involved in creating the coin. Contrast this with sheets of identical paper costing approximately three and a half cents apiece, the only significant difference being the number that is printed thereon.

Publications by the Federal Reserve Banks of Chicago, New York, and Boston, all claim that money is "created" when they write a check. Merely *alleging* that money is created by a bank does not mean that money or value is *really* created by a bank. This is the fraud that is making the bankers rich and causing the nation to remain bankrupt. The Constitution says that Congress coins money and regulates the value. Title 31 U. S. Code § 5103 says "*United States coins and currency ... are legal tender for all debts, public charges, taxes, and dues.*" This *excludes* Federal Reserve Notes, regardless of what it says on their face. The last U. S. Currency that was printed was issued in 1963, by John F. Kennedy, and ceased to be printed *immediately* upon his death. The only conclusion that we may draw is that the bankers are writing bad checks and calling them money.

The process of forcing a Zero Balance starts with obtaining ALL of the bank's records on the loan. Find where the bank caused you to sign a Promissory Note. Identify where they deposited your own promissory note into your account as money. Demand of the banker, proof that he has given something of value for the Promissory Note (not just a rubber check) that has made the Promissory note the property of the bank. When the banker cannot do this, you then demand that the bank zero out the loan.

Tom Schauf and/or Conrad LeBeau can provide the complete directions on how to make the bank either return a zero-balance on the loans or face charges of criminal fraud. Addresses for contacting these sources are in **Appendix XVII**. Both books show the process in fine detail and show proposed court filings. They also advise against going to court if at all possible.

If you have credit card debt or bank loan debt that is standing in the way of achieving Sovereignty, then by any means available, buy one of these books and get started on the road toward freedom.

---

**"Your income tax is 100 percent voluntary tax, and your liquor tax is 100 percent enforced tax. Now, the situation is as different as night and day..."** – Dwight E. Avis, former head of the Alcohol and Tobacco Tax Division of the IRS, testifying before a House Ways and Means subcommittee in 1953.

## 16 — MAKING IT EASY ON YOURSELF

This Chapter consists of specific recommendations based on the underlying principles of Sovereignty and on the collective knowledge of Americans who have experienced both man's government and God's government. You will learn that there are certain **tools** available for you to use to make the transfer of jurisdictions as easy on yourself as possible. These **tools** are *only* tools. They are *not* magic wands, potions, or amulets, which you may throw at bureaucrats to make them disappear. Examples of **tools** are your International Motorist Qualification (IMQ), an Offshore Trust, a Corporation Sole, and your car's identification plate. Learning to *use* your tools is almost synonymous with learning to use *common sense*. We will discuss how to use these tools later, but first we must cover the most important issue of Sovereignty.

**Get out of debt.** If you are only reading this book to discover a slick way to evade income tax and you have no deep-seated hunger for the responsibility that goes hand-in-hand with Liberty, then I am afraid this will just be one more big disappointment for you. If, however, you find yourself deeply in debt and wish to find the shortest and fastest way to discharge the debt so you can leave the world's jurisdiction, then there are sources of help available. You might consider writing to one or more of the organizations listed in **Appendix XXI and XXII** for literature or for personal consultation. If you think your particular problems need the personal attention of an expert, then you should be ready to pay for the help at roughly the same rate as you would pay for a lawyer or top-flight CPA. If the experts can assist you in becoming a Sovereign, it is more than any attorney or CPA would ever do for you *at any price*. **Freedom has never been free.** It is better to learn to deal with debts by yourself because that way you will not get yourself back into debt again. Debts are not always the result of living beyond one's means, so if you really do need help, the first thing to do is pray and the next is to get as much help as you can afford. Write to some of the organizations listed in **Appendix XXI** and see what they offer. Pray and study. Things *will* get better if you are doing everything you can to be free.

Second, **stay out of debt.** I have said before and I'll say again, one of the simplest definitions of a Sovereign is "**He whose only obligations are under God's Law.**" He has no debts. If you want to own a house, either buy some bare land for cash and build something you can afford or else pay cash for a house you want to live in. **DON'T BORROW.** The borrower is the slave of the lender. **NEVER** get a credit card. ATM cards? **YES.** Debit cards? **YES.** **Credit** cards? **NO! NEVER! NOT IN A MILLION YEARS!**

Be a lender and a ruler, not a borrower and a slave. Make it known in your community that you will make fully secured loans at favorable interest rates. Favorable to who? Favorable to *you*. We are often asked if it isn't immoral to charge interest. Deuteronomy 23:20 says that charging usury is a blessing, not a sin. But one must be careful of whom one charges the usury. Outside of your family or very close circle of friends, you have every right to charge interest. If you loan money at the same rate the bank does, but don't have any overhead, don't you think you would have a higher profit margin? Actually you *won't*, because *banks don't loan money, they extend credit*. Loaning **your money** at interest is an honorable way to make a living. What banks do when they kite checks and call them "loans," is unconscionable. Always keep your balance sheet and reckon the value of the loans in value of gold or silver. FRN's devalue too rapidly to use them as an accurate measure of value.

Because you will need identification anyway, get an IMQ. The cost is between \$50 and \$200 by the time you are through getting pictures, postage, and all that sort of thing. Very much worth it! I associated myself with an Offshore, Grantor Trust that had been in existence for a while before I got my position with them. They allowed me to register the permanent address on my IMQ at the Trust's headquarters. This made it easier when I went to the bank to open a bank account for the Trust.

If possible, you should obtain your IMQ from the country that is the home of the Trust. You get your car's ownership identification plates from the same source as your IMQ. You open your bank accounts in the name of the Trust. You own nothing. Your name is on nothing. You are required by the Trust to use and maintain the things you buy for them. It actually works out the same as the relationship that you had with the state DMV, *except* you are under common law now, and you can lawfully drive any speed that is safe. It is *not illegal* for you to take your neighbor lady, with her infant, to the grocery store, even if you don't own an infant restraining seat.

### IN WHOM DO YOU PLACE YOUR TRUST?

The television program, "20/20," ran a special investigation of Phil Marsh and the Pilot Connection Society. 20/20 used a hidden camera and showed Phil saying *at a meeting* that Trusts were good. Sound bites from a private interview (specially selected for public exposure) made it appear as if Phil backpedaled a little. He said that he recommended Trusts to *some* people but didn't "*recommend them, per se.*" Keith Anderson, my *expert* on Trusts, was in charge of spending over one hundred twenty five thousand dollars on research into Trusts. He knows what he is doing. Based on my satisfaction with the Trust that I am associated with, I *will* recommend Keith's Trusts to *everyone. I'll shout it from the rooftops!*

A federal "Trust-Buster" team of lawyers, accountants, and treasury agents subpoenaed a Citizen who is associated with an Anderson's Ark Associates Trust. Before they even began questioning the Citizen, the Citizen asked if he could give the Trust-Buster Team a little information about the Trust. They said, "***Go ahead. THEN we'll bust your Trust, because we know it is illegal.***" The Citizen associated with the Trust said, "***It is a foreign, Grantor Trust. It has a foreign Trustor, a foreign Trustee, and a foreign Beneficiary. I am not a beneficiary. Your worst possible case scenario would only find that I occasionally perform services for this Trust. Now, what was it you wanted to ask me?***" The entire room-full of Trust-Busters picked up their clipboards and briefcases, walked out of the room, and crawled back under whatever rock those kinds of creatures come from.

Twenty years ago, the big financial buzzword was "***tax shelter.***" Today, it seems like every financial advisor and life insurance salesman is posing as an expert on **Trusts**. Be very careful about both Domestic *and* Foreign Trusts because the IRS can afford to spend more money on finding ways to bust them than most people can spend on making the Trust secure. The IRS has had quite a bit of success busting other kinds of Trusts, but some carefully written, properly registered, offshore, Grantor Trusts appear to be "unbustable."

Research has pointed the way to a very simple formula that would require the federal government to either ignore their own laws or to make laws that would destroy the world of commerce. Offshore, Grantor Trusts are a bit more expensive to set up, because they require that the businesses or individuals that serve as Trustee, Trustor, and Beneficiary be stable, reliable, and **TRUSTworthy** people. Not all offshore trust providers are reliable. Some trusts that have been investigated in financial dealings have been found to have Trustees, Trustors, and Beneficiaries that were picked at random from the telephone book. The person that bought the

trust was buying some pieces of paper that only cost a few dollars to produce and they have lost thousands of dollars. They thought that they were going to save a few hundred by buying a less expensive trust, but paid a huge price because they did not use due diligence. I have had no trouble with the Anderson's Ark Trust. I am *very* happy with the Trust with which I am associated.

To keep from "getting burned" on a poorly written trust, you must be sufficiently knowledgeable on trusts, endowments, taxes, corporations, and investments. The legendary country/western music star, Willie Nelson, trusted his tax attorneys and accountants, and the IRS took virtually everything that Willie possessed. Everyone has his own favorite example of misplaced trust. When dealing with things as important as your finances, you *must* take responsibility for the end result because *you* are the one that lives with the results. In the movie *The Princess Bride*, the Dread Pirate Roberts said, "*Life IS pain, Princess. Anyone who tells you differently is selling something.*" Merely because a financial services consultant is *selling something* does not make the salesman untrustworthy. But it does mean that the *client* must not allow the *salesman* to make decisions about which products and services are the correct ones to serve the client's needs. The salesman sees his job as making the decision *for* you and his decision is *rarely* based purely upon *your* interests. Caveat emptor (Let the buyer beware).

The immediate appeal of a trust is that the organization lives on after the Trustor dies, so there are no probate expenses or estate taxes. Some grantor trusts, like the *Clifford* trust, only *defer* the taxes or pay the taxes at a lower rate. A properly drawn-up system of domestic and offshore entities may owe no taxes at all.

The use of a properly organized, offshore trust is such a powerful tool that even a *non-Sovereign* may take advantage of *most* of its features. For instance, because the money in the account does not *belong* to the non-Sovereign, the bank accounts are opened using an IRS form **W-8**, without giving a SSN or taking personal tax liability for the account. (When you do this, you also must use an offshore, mail-drop address as the registered address for the account.) If you associate with a non-Sovereign in a family or business way, the non-Sovereign may be given the authority to write checks on the account. He/she will still have no more *personal tax liability* than an employee of Texaco who writes million dollar checks for tanker-sized cargoes of oil. Since foreigners do not have a SSN and are therefore not liable for the national debt, there is no reporting of the account to the IRS. However, if the country in which you open your Trust ever declares war on the United States, the IRS *may* freeze the assets in the account, as happened to Iranian assets during Carter's administration - so *pray for peace!*

In regard to trusts, I cannot *personally* recommend any system other than the Offshore Grantor Trust of the same type that is written by Keith Anderson and marketed through Anderson's Ark Associates, because that is the only *personal experience* that I have. From personal studies of the IRS Code and interviews with many other Financial Service Providers, I have learned how the Multiple Trust System works and I have confidence in the three-level system. Anderson's Ark Associates writes multi-tiered Trusts, too, if they are appropriate for the Client. I can recommend them for people with larger business holdings, because I have personally discussed how they work with the CPA's that write them and have seen the IRS codes and forms that apply.

### **Single Trust System**

If your needs are simple and you do not have a large number of business assets to protect, the quick answer is to consult a financial services provider and buy a position on the board of directors of an offshore, Grantor Trust. The position will cost you from \$3,000 upward

plus an annual renewal fee (usually \$300-\$500/yr). The price depends more on the complexity of the association from which you *obtain* the Trust than on the complexity of the Trust, itself. If you tried to make all of the contacts and do all of the traveling yourself, it might cost you over \$15,000 to find the protection available in a good consultant's office for \$4,000.00.

A trust is a contract between a Trustee, Trustor(s), and the Beneficiaries, and most people become associated with trusts in one of these three capacities. **Grantor** Trusts are very different in that they are set up in advance and *your* association with the Trust is more like that of an employee or agent. This means that the financial service provider must locate dependable people and set up an entire organization in advance. The Trust Agreement is already drawn, signed and sealed. The only thing it is waiting for is to have *your* name inserted as the Director of the Board, your spouse's name as secretary, and your children as auditors, property managers, etc. Although they are more complex than a Pure Trust, **Grantor Trusts** are the simplest kind of trust that will totally isolate you from ownership of a piece of real or personal property. The IRS cannot take anything away from you unless they can *prove* that it is yours. Even though it is **not** your money in the bank, because the Trustee's name is not on the list of approved signatures, you are the only person that is allowed to write a check. The checking account of a Grantor Trust may be kept in the United States with no requirement that the board members have Social Security Numbers. The current price to have you and your family members appointed to the board of a Trust like the one I use is \$3,100 plus a \$400 annual renewal fee. There are no bookkeeping expenses or IRS tax filings.

#### **Agent for a Foreign Corporation**

If you have the right connections, you may take a position as an agent for a foreign corporation and operate in a similar capacity as if you were a manager of a foreign grantor trust. The secret is in the detail. The articles of incorporation must be written correctly and isolate you from any tax liability on any property or funds. My Trust expert has been using these kinds of foreign Corporation/Agent systems for some time now and the clients are having no IRS problems.

#### **Complex Business Organization**

A business may decide to use a domestic Business Trust or Limited Partnership for holding title of their business property. The **Domestic Trust** is then owned by a foreign Trust, which is owned by a *second* foreign Trust. This arrangement is called a Complex Business Organization (CBO). Ideally, the expenses of running the business will be paid out of the income from the business and *all profits are paid to Foreign Trust #1*. The Domestic Trust will have bookkeeping expenses and annual renewal fees. It will file a U.S. tax return, but because it has no profits, it will pay no taxes.

**Foreign Trust #1** will receive the money from the **Domestic Trust**, do some paperwork, and *file a tax return* showing that there was *no profit*, because all of the profit was paid to **Foreign Trust #2**. There are bookkeeping expenses and annual renewal fees.

**Foreign Trust #2** has only one job - to help you live in the manner in which you wish to become accustomed! To accomplish this, **Trust #2** receives money from **Trust #1** and from investments. It may compensate you for services *or* make investments. **Trust #2** does not file a U.S. tax return because it is not effectively connected to a U.S. trade or business. **Foreign Trust #2's** may keep bank accounts in the Bahamas, Costa Rica, Sark, Jersey, or Cayman Islands and make use of them through a VISA Debit card. A CBO allows a business to maximize its profits and allows for a great deal of financial flexibility. Trusts have been around for years and provide a very flexible means of protecting your estate and your assets.

The initial cost of a three-layer system can run from \$9,000 to \$90,000 dollars. The cost depends on the complexity of *your* business and the degree of skill with which your documents are developed. A business with a current tax liability of \$15,000-\$20,000 is missing the boat if they are not using a CBO to reduce their tax liabilities. Annual expenses may be \$1,500 or more, and are for bookkeeping, tax form filing, and renewal fees for all three trusts.

### ONE CORPORATION, *WITH SOLE!*

There are two general classifications of corporations – aggregate and sole. Aggregate corporations have boards of directors, officers, issue shares, and have bylaws. A Corporation Sole consists of one incorporated (embodied) *office* and provides for a succession of *office holders*, with no board of directors, no shares, no bylaws, no annual meeting minutes, and no other officers. This form of corporation grew out of a need for the Church of England and the Roman Church to find an orderly and secure way to hold and pass title to church property. The modern Corporation Sole is the result of 450 years of common law testing. It is very rare that a court case involving a Corporation Sole will go to the appeal level, because the bugs were worked out of the system long ago.

Arizona Statutes specifically provide that the corporation will never die, but consist of only one official position that is occupied by a series of people. The British Crown is a Corporation Sole. The Archbishop of Canterbury is a Corporation Sole, as are all bishops and vicars in the Episcopal Church. To simplify this concept, you may think of the King of England Corporate Sole as being a series of Monarchs. In this sense, Queen Elizabeth is the same Corporation Sole as Queen Victoria, King George III, King Edward, and King James. As of 1967, most offices of Catholic Bishop in the United States were organized as Corporations Sole. There are functioning Corporations Sole in over half of the states and there are explicit statutes in seventeen states that describe Corporations Sole. Some states specifically *recognize* Corporations Sole but do *not permit statutes to be written* regarding them because of the first amendment prohibition against a government making laws respecting an establishment of Religion or prohibiting the free exercise thereof. Virginia and West Virginia have constitutions that forbid laws respecting an establishment of religion, hence, no statutes on Corporation Sole.

Arizona Statutes provide for Corporations Sole to be formed for the purpose of acquiring, holding, and disposing of church or religious society property for the benefit of religion, for works of charity and for public worship, and of property of scientific research institutions maintained solely for pure research and without expectation of pecuniary gain or profit. (This description was taken almost verbatim from the statute.)

The Corporation Sole appears to be the answer to the Sovereign's prayers! We may register a Corporation Sole as a religious society who's purpose is education, medical services, legal services, or whatever our religious society decides is worthy of our efforts. By recording the ownership of the property as a church, it is entitled to all of the consideration of other churches and religious societies in your county. The church may buy, hold, and sell property (real and personal) with complete *tax immunity*. Whereas aggregate corporations are capitalized for a certain dollar value, there is absolutely no statutory limitation on how much money may pass through the coffers of a church or religious society. Remember, the Corporation Sole was developed by the Roman Church and the British Crown. You don't think that either of *them* would allow a mere *government* to interrupt *their* cash flow, do you?

To form a Corporation Sole, a church official is elected or appointed in conformity to the church constitution, canons, rites, or regulations. Pure research organizations may make and subscribe to formal articles of incorporation and acknowledge and record them in the same

manner as a deed in each county in which real property of the corporation is situated, together with an impression of the Seal that it adopts. Not all states provide for a Seal.

Normal procedure when a Corporation Sole finds itself in court is for the constitution, bylaws, canons, or regulations of the church to *replace* the state statutes and rules of court. If a church regulation covers a particular situation, the church regulation takes precedence over the state statute or rule of procedure. Because the government has no power over any free church, all enforcement procedures must use the rules of the church! What this means in practical terms is that it is to your advantage to engage the services of a knowledgeable professional to draw up your church charter. Beware of *bargains* in brain surgeons, lawyers, and people who set up Trusts and Corporations Sole!

Most Catholic Dioceses consist of *many* Corporations Sole under the umbrella of one incorporated office of a bishop. Each building or automobile may be its own corporation. The reason is purely to limit insurance liability. If the church school bus is involved in an accident, the recourse is to the corporation that owns the school bus, not the entire school building or sanctuary.

Cost to set up and maintain a Corporation Sole can be considerably less than a comparative level of protection by a Trust. The initial Corporation Sole for a church or religious society will cost from \$600.00 to \$3,000.00. You may be taking your chances with the less expensive ones and you should be getting a gilt-edged book for the top dollar figure. Usually, because the big job of compiling your church charter has been finished, your subsidiary Corporations Sole are discounted heavily. If it takes \$2,000.00 worth of time and effort to write up your first Corporation Sole, then the subsidiary Corporations should cost roughly one-third to two thirds of that. There would be some one-time expenses, such as the cost of designing an impression seal and having it built. In order to be official, an impression of the seal must be filed when the Corporation is recorded in your county. In a manner similar to the expense of Trusts, the price of the original Corporation Sole will depend more on the attention to detail and level of service that you are getting than on the cost of typing and printing. Cost of additional corporations are much less expensive because the cost of drawing up the Charter and ordering the Seal are eliminated.

There are no annual renewal fees for Corporations Sole, as there are in Trusts. Future expenses will include only the normal costs of operation, plus the registration with the county recorder every time the person occupying the office of Corporation Sole is replaced by another person.

The Corporation Sole has the potential to solve many of the current problems that face Americans. I can imagine the benefit to home-schooling groups, right to life groups, and even extended families of Christians. Especially because immunity from real estate tax is virtually guaranteed merely by filing the documents! An initial cost of \$1,500.00 to \$3,000.00 is low enough (with no annual fees) that it should not be beyond the reach of most families and groups. If the Corporation Sole is flexible enough to manage the operation of the Anglican Church or Roman Churches and Hospitals, then a Corporation Sole has the flexibility to manage the operation of a healing ministry, publishing ministry, a church school, and a transportation ministry, as well as manage all of the real estate owned by the religious society or church.

The only limit I have found to Corporation Sole is that, under *common* law, Corporations Sole are historically used only for holding title to *real* property. Some states, like Alaska, have such poorly written statutes that it would be unwise to organize in those states. Also, we need to police ourselves, because if the Sovereigns abuse the use of Corporation Sole

by using them to hold title to bars, brothels, and bomb factories then it will not be very long before the government (in concert with the most powerful organized churches in the world) will find a way to circumvent *our* right to use Corporation Sole. In spite of this, I believe that the Corporation Sole is more secure as a method of holding title to real estate than an offshore Trust, and considerably less expensive. I do not know of any Trust writing company that gives you a break in price on an unlimited number of subsidiary Trusts!

### STAYING SEPARATED

Are you getting the picture of how advantageous it is to be *completely* separated from the system? Because Sovereignty, at its most basic level, means being free of both *debt* and *legal disabilities*, then being completely separated from the system means that we have protected ourselves *in advance* from IRS liens, levies, and land grabs. With no debt or legal disability, our rights are not compromised. Our separation can be as restful as it is profitable when the IRS no longer has our permission to put their hands in our pockets. We will spend our time in profitable pursuits instead of spending those hours slaving to maintain records for IRS.

When Moses was given the job of turning Jacob's (Israel's) family into a Nation, they were "*called out*" of Egypt. They were admonished to be completely separated from other nations. The Greek word translated "*church*" in the New Testament means "*called out ones*." If we are totally separated from earthly governments (as were the Israelites) and we are obedient to all of God's laws (as the Israelites *rarely* were) then we may claim as our own all of the protection and blessings that God had bestowed upon the Israelites.

### SUMMARY

This Chapter discussed certain **tools** that you may use to make your transition from slave to Sovereign an easy and pleasant experience. As you become more comfortable with your new status, you will have less use for the tools. For instance, as Sovereigns begin to educate the local police, the police will leave them alone while they are driving down the road without a license plate on their car. After a Sovereign has sued the city or county a few times, you can bet your bottom dollar the government will leave us alone. If you don't travel extensively, you may even find you can do away with the Trust and your bank accounts. You will eventually decide which tools you find useful and which ones you can live without.

Keep in mind, though, that the Trusts, motorist qualifications, ID plates, registrations, etc. are only **tools**. They are not magic, and just *having* the tool is no substitute for knowing how to *use* the tool. When I worked as a carpenter, I learned that although the best carpenters knew how to use *all* of the tools, they could also accomplish the most with the fewest tools. It is the same way with Sovereignty. As you become more knowledgeable, you will become more adept at using fewer tools. The teacher from whom I learned many of these principles has even stopped using any kind of plate *at all* on his automobiles. It seems that most of the secret is in *remembering to pray* and in knowing how to communicate with bureaucrats.

---

### LEGAL MAXIM

**Lex non cogit ad impossibilia**

**The law does not compel the doing of impossibilities.**

This is why contracts may be voided for impossibility. - author

## DEFINITIONS

## 28 USC Judiciary and Judicial Procedure

## 3002. Definitions

(15) "United States" means-

(A) a Federal corporation ...

(B) an agency, department, commission, board, or other entity of the United States ...

(C) an *instrumentality* of the United States ...

## 26 USC Internal Revenue Code

## 6331. Levy and Distraint

(b) Levy may be made upon the accrued salary or wages of any Officer, employee, or elected official of the United States or of the District of Columbia, or any agency or *instrumentality of the United States* or of the District of Columbia by serving Notice of Levy ... (etc.) ...

**Author's note:** There you have it, Folks! You voluntarily took the SSN. You voluntarily signed the Form 1040 LABEL, waiver of rights contract. Did you understand the result of your actions? According to *Brady v. U.S.*, you may not waive a right unless you fully understand the consequences of waiving that right. This gives you a valid reason to rescind the SSN and revoke your signature from the 1040 forms.

**Corruption of blood.** In English law, the consequence of *attainder*, being that the attainted person could neither inherit lands or other hereditaments from his ancestor, nor retain those he already had, nor transmit them by descent to any heir, because his blood was considered in law to be corrupted. *Avery v. Everett*, 110 N.Y. 317, 18 N.E. 148. This was abolished by St. 3 & 4, Wm. IV, c. 106, and 33 & 34 Vict., c 23, and is *unknown in America*. Const. U.S., Art. III, § 3. - From Black's Law Dictionary, Fifth Edition. (bold, italics, & U.L. added)

**Author's note:** Unknown until real estate tax, anyway.

---

**New Mexico Administrative Code Chapter 66-2-17(I)**

I. "No court of this state has jurisdiction to entertain any proceeding by any person in which the person calls into question the application to that person of any provision of the Motor Vehicle Code, except as a consequence of the appeal by that person to the district court from the action and order of the secretary or hearing officer as provided for in this section."

Look in your own state's *administrative* code for the parallel to this New Mexico Code. If you are successful in finding the same type of law in your own state, then keep several copies of this code in each of your cars in a "traffic stop" envelope, with the statement "*I am calling into question the application of the traffic code over myself and my property.*" Add a line for your signature and date. When stopped, *be polite* and give the signed form to the officer, requesting that the officer call his dispatcher for instructions. Inform the officer that you will wait until he calls the dispatcher. If you live in a rural community where the cops all know each other, this should be your last stop. The courts have **no jurisdiction** over Sovereigns!

---

Black's Law Dictionary – Fifth Edition  
West Publishing Co. 1979

**Name.** The designation of an individual person, or of a firm or corporation.

A person's "name" consists of one or more Christian or given names and one surname or family name. It is the distinctive characterization in words by which one is known and distinguished from others, and description, or abbreviation, is not the equivalent of a "name".

See also **Alias**; Christian name; **Corporate name**; **Fictitious name**; Full name; generic (Generic name); **Legal name**; Nickname; Street name; Surname; Trade name.

**Alias.** Term used to indicate another name by which a person is known. Short for "alias dictus"; otherwise known as (a.k.a.). When used in connection with a description of a person, it indicates that he has used or been known by another name.

**Corporate name.** When a corporation is formed, state statutes require that such be given a name and such name is kept on record with the proper state authority (e.g. Secretary of State's office). Only by and under such name may the corporation sue or be sued and do all legal acts.

**Fictitious name.** A counterfeit, alias, feigned, or pretended name taken by a person, differing in some essential particular from his true name (consisting of Christian name and patronymic), *WITH the implication that it is meant to deceive or mislead.* [emphasis added by the author]

**Legal name.** Under common law consists of one Christian name and one surname, and the insertion, omission or mistake in middle name or initial is immaterial. The "legal name" of an individual consists of a given or baptismal name, usually assumed at birth, and a surname derived from the common name of the parents. Application of Green, 54 Misc.2d 606, 283 N.Y.S.2d 242, 245.

**Author's note:** Let's sum up the various legal meanings of "Name". *Your name* is what designates *you*. If you have ever been known by another name (i.e. if you were adopted, married, divorced, etc) then you have an **alias** because it is another name by which you have been known. If there is a designation for you on file with an appropriate state agency and you must do business, sue and be sued, and be known by this name and no other, that would be your **Corporate name**. A **fictitious name** is a name given with the intent and purpose of *deceiving or misleading* someone. Your **legal name**, under common law, consists of a name that *may* have been given to you at birth and *usually* denotes family heritage. If the name is *yours*, then *you* may change it without asking permission from anybody. If your name is *incorporated*, then the state owns the name and you may *not* change it. You may not change your *incorporated name* without going through the proper, legal steps to disfranchise the name.

### Excerpts from the Law Book

**Romans 6:16** Do you not know that to whom you present yourselves slaves to obey, **you are that one's slaves whom you obey**, whether of sin to death, or of obedience to righteousness?

**I Corinthians 7:23** You were bought at a price; **do not become slaves of men.**

(Comment: The borrower is the slave of the lender. He is saying, *Don't go into debt to men.*)

**Galatians 5:1** Stand fast therefore in the **liberty** by which Christ has made us free, and **do not be entangled again with a yoke of bondage.**

**Galatians 5:22-23** But the fruit of the Spirit is **love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control.** Against such there is no law.

[see also: **Philippians 4:8-9**]

**Galatians 6:1-5** Brethren, if a man is overtaken in any trespass, you who are spiritual restore such a one in a **spirit of gentleness**, considering yourself lest you also be tempted. **Bear one another's burdens**, and so fulfill the law of Christ. For if anyone thinks himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceives himself. But **let each one examine his own work**, and then **he will have rejoicing** in himself alone, and not in another. For **each one shall bear his own load.** (Comment: How can we hope to bear *another's* burdens if we are not able to carry our own?)

**Philippians 3:18-20** For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: whose end is destruction, whose god is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame—who set **their** mind on **earthly** things. **For our citizenship is in heaven**, from which we also eagerly wait for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ.

**James 5:1-12** Come now, you rich [men], weep and howl for your miseries that are coming upon you! Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten. Your gold and silver are corroded, and their corrosion will be a witness against you and will eat your flesh like fire. You have heaped up treasure in the last days. Indeed **the wages of the laborers** who mowed your fields, **which you kept back by fraud**, cry out; and the cries of the reapers have reached the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth. **You have lived on the earth in pleasure and luxury**; you have fattened your hearts as in a day of slaughter. You have condemned, **you have murdered the just**; he does not resist you.

Therefore **be patient**, brethren, until the coming of the Lord. See how the farmer waits for the precious fruit of the earth, waiting patiently for it until it receives the early and latter rain. You also be patient. **Establish your hearts**, for the coming of the Lord is at hand. **Do not grumble against one another**, brethren, lest you be condemned. Behold, the Judge is standing at the door! My brethren. Take the prophets, who spoke in the name of the Lord, as an example of suffering and patience. Indeed we count them blessed who endure. You have heard of the perseverance of Job and seen the end intended by the Lord; that the Lord is very compassionate and merciful. But above all, my brethren, do not swear, either by heaven or by earth or with any other oath. But **let your "Yes," be "Yes," and your "No," "No,"** lest you fall into judgment.

## 17 — YOU ARE WHO YOU SAY YOU ARE

In this Chapter, we deal with the problems of **birth certificates, identity in general, and identity under common law.**

Because United States identity documents are organized in their unique way, you might decide to use a different name. If you have ever worried about a particularly bad credit rating, a criminal conviction, or an ex-husband stalking you, you may have already thought about changing your name. But there are other reasons that may cause a quiet-living person to consider a name change, as well.

One big problem we have not discussed yet is your **birth certificate.** In some States, the official title of the Birth Certificate is “**Affidavit of Live Birth.**” Your birth certificate is a signed and recorded **affidavit** and its function is the same as the *manufacturer’s certificate of origin* on a car. ***It is your ownership papers.*** Remember the discussion about a marriage license being a three-way contract bringing the government into the partnership and how everything produced by the partnership is the property of all partners? This includes the children. Since the birth certificate is like the manufacturer’s certificate of origin, whoever holds the original holds the best evidence of ownership. States routinely sell birth certificates to the U. S. Department of Commerce, thus transferring your ownership to a federal agency.

By the time most of us are in our thirties, the name we were born with has been attached to so many contracts with the government that the name is forever contaminated. Even if you have never previously considered changing the spelling of your name, then remembering all of the contracts you have signed might cause you to give some thought to a name change. Those of us who have never previously considered changing our name will first wonder if it is illegal. We know the word “alias” and have always heard and seen it used in a negative context. Is using an alias illegal? No, it isn’t. Look at the definition of “alias” from *Black’s*. In American Common Law, your legal name is the name you use and by which you are known.

Most immigrants to the united States change the spelling of their names. I used to know a couple of brothers of Italian descent, one of whom ended his last name with “etti” and the other with “etto,” yet they were both American born. There can be no rigid spelling of a name that is translated into English from a language that does not use the English alphabet. How could there be a “correct” spelling when translating a Chinese name? Or Sri Lankan? A Mexican named *Enrique* may easily translate his name to *Henry, Henri, or Heinrich*. You could even call him *Ricky*. In the King James Version of the Bible, there is a patriarch named Noah in the Old Testament who is called Noe in the New Testament; the result of an ancient Hebrew name being translated into Greek and later into English.

There are many examples in the Bible of people changing their names at some point in their religious experience. Abram became Abraham. Jacob became Israel. Levi became Matthew. Saul became Paul. The name change was used to show the new nature of the new man. It was a daily reminder of their new role in life.

U. S. identity documents use your date of *delivery* as your date of *birth*. It does not take very much study of either biology or the Bible to realize that your life as a unique individual human person *begins at conception*. Your true date of birth would be the beginning of your life; i.e., your date of conception. Most people in the world already count age in this manner. In China, a person is a year old when they are delivered and everyone becomes a year older on

Chinese New Year. If the abortion “rights” activists understood that their own life began at conception, there would be less confusion over whether or not abortion is murder.

Do you have the right to change your name without government *permission*? Think about it. Haven’t women been doing it for centuries? It is not automatic nor does it require a court order for a wife to take her husband’s name. All she has to do is do it. The right to change your name may be determined merely by looking at the words, “*your name*.” If *you* own the name, you *may* change it. If it is an incorporated name then *the government* owns it and you *may not* change it.

During my time as a juror on the arson/murder trial in Alaska that I related to you in Chapter 4, one of the prosecution’s star witnesses was an escaped arsonist (plea bargained to property damage) who had been serving time in Arizona. He took the stand under a fictitious name, thus hiding his history from the defense attorneys. He was aided in this deception by the prosecutor who had worked out a deal with him to avoid extradition in exchange for testimony damaging to the defendant. When the defense attorneys finally found out his real name and that he had escaped from prison, he was brought back to the witness stand for further cross-examination. The judge instructed the jury that there was nothing illegal about using a different name, even to avoid being extradited to finish a prison sentence. The judge told us that any American has the right to call himself by any name that pleases him. There was nothing illegal about using a name different from the one on his birth certificate. Under American common law, *you are who you say you are*.

Because your birth certificate name, your date of delivery, and your SSN are your primary identifying criteria in U. S. identity documents, the government loses all attachment to your *Sovereign* self if you use a different spelling of your name, your date of conception, and if you do not have a SSN. Let’s say someone with the birth certificate name of Peder Johnsen, delivered on August 26, 1969, and with a SSN was to take this route. He could now name himself Pete Johnson with a conception date of November 26, 1968 and no SSN. He would be a new person as far as any record keeping system used in the United States is concerned. He could not be the same guy. He’s almost a year older, for one thing, and he’s Swedish, not Norwegian.

In the old days, before we knew how to free ourselves from the legal disability of the SSN, it was quite common to change one’s name as a means of dealing with the birth certificate. Although changing your name is easier now, it may not be as advisable as it was only a few years ago. The ability to *prove* that we are *free of legal disability* may put us in a stronger position in case of legal attack (as in, *hailed into court*) than to use a new name and try to overcome the assumption in the clouded minds of the judges and jurors that this un-numbered person must be either lying or hiding something, because everybody *knows* you need a Social Security Card.

It is kinda like the old story about the guy who has been committed to a mental hospital for testing and then released with a clean bill of (mental) health. He is usually the only person in the room with papers to prove that he’s sane! If we keep our name and papers, then we can prove that the government has no contractual authority to harass us.

You didn’t sign your birth certificate so you can’t revoke your signature. You were not party to any contract so you can’t break it for fraud. What do you do? If you feel you must do something, I can offer only two possibilities:

**Method 1** is to change the spelling of your name, use your date of conception as your birth date instead of your date of delivery, and get new identification made. The cost will be

somewhere between \$200 to \$2,000 depending on how much real and personal property you own. I know that this works.

**Method 2** is to write, notarize, and record an affidavit citing laws like the so-called thirteenth amendment and any of your state statutes that prohibit involuntary servitude. Whereas *voluntarily* taking a SSN subjects one to *voluntary* servitude and is legal (from that standpoint) indenturing a newly born baby is certainly involuntary servitude and is patently unconstitutional. You would cite Marbury vs. Madison, 5 US (2 Cranch) 137, 174, 176 (1803) and Miranda vs. Arizona, 384 US 436, 491 and Norton vs. Shelby County, 118 US 425, 442, and 16 Am Jur 2d, Sec 177. More laws will be cited showing that your parents were not engaged in inter-racial marriage and tracing your lineage (especially your father) to free people living in America between July 4, 1776 and the adoption of the so-called 13<sup>th</sup> and 14<sup>th</sup> amendments. Those are a few tactics for starters, but there are many more.

After recording the affidavit, you would compose a CONSTRUCTIVE NOTICE to use as a cover letter and send these to your state's department of vital statistics, your Secretary of State, the U. S. Secretary of State, and to the U. S. Secretary of Commerce. You would use the Certificates of Mailing, return receipts, and you would use all of the paperwork procedures you used to revoke the Social Security Card.

Method number two works, but it is more complicated. I have some personal friends that have used this method and have no problems. I went back to an older French spelling of our family name and it works for me. There may be some sentimental reasons to keep the spelling on your family name the same as it has been for the last few generations, but frankly, I am not *that* attached to being identified by a slave's ownership papers, however fraudulently issued.

### TWO CASE HISTORIES

Here are two stories from the Pacific Northwest dealing with names and identity. Maybe you can learn something from these stories. I have changed their names, but when my friends read about themselves in this book, they will know themselves instantly. These stories are true and were related to me by the individuals described.

A friend of mine, Clarence Block, was born in Washington Republic as I was. He worked for a while in Alaska, as I did, and he also had problems with the IRS, SSA, Alaska Fish Commission, and other goon squads. He was a self-confessed, unruly slave. One day he happened to find a copy of his birth certificate and, much to his surprise, he found that his parents had named him George! His own parents had been calling him by the wrong name all of his life! What was he to do? His SSN and all his identity was in the name of Clarence, but his real name was George! He started calling himself George and, *lo and behold*, his problems with bureaucrats disappeared. Their narrow, bureaucratic minds were ONLY angry with Clarence Block. Because you are who you say you are, George now has no SSN *or* bureaucratic hassles. George still has his state birth certificate.

The second incident involved a minister in the Embassy of Heaven Church. I will call this minister Forrest Givens. Forrest is a very busy man who uses his time in his car as teaching time. He usually has someone with him who is learning about Sovereignty and the Kingdom of Heaven. Forrest drives very carefully and rarely exceeds the posted speed advisory because he is effectively using his time to instruct the passenger.

On one particular trip from Seattle, Washington down to the church headquarters in Oregon, Forrest had two other people in the car with him. His fellow church member (a Sovereign) was sitting in the front seat and a non-Sovereign, who was in the information gathering stage of his learning experience, was sitting in the back seat. The man in the back seat

had the usual contracts with the government such as a driver's license, SSN, etc. Forrest has a plate on his car that just says "HEAVEN" since he is a minister in the Embassy of Heaven Church. He had the plate made; it is not a state-issued plate. A sharp-eyed Washington State Patrol (WSP) saw the plate and turned on his lights. Because Washington statutes and common courtesy say that you are to pull to the side and allow an emergency vehicle to pass, Forrest slowed down and pulled over, but did not go to the shoulder or stop. The WSP then pulled up beside him, got on his PA speaker, and ordered Forrest to pull over and stop.

Because all United States Ambassadors and Diplomats carry diplomatic passports, Forrest carries a diplomatic passport, too. Aren't our rights as Sovereigns a kind of diplomatic immunity? Remember, the *People* created the Constitution and the Constitution created the government. Doesn't the Constitution say, in Article IV § 2, "*The Citizens of each State shall be entitled to all Privileges and IMMUNITIES of the Citizens in the several States?*" If you don't have a firm idea in your own mind what "immunities" you are entitled to, then this is one more thing that you need to learn. Because Forrest is a minister, it is even more important *to him* that the Bible refers to Christians as "*Christ's Ambassadors*" and that upon switching from man's jurisdiction to God's jurisdiction he had renounced all allegiance to any other sovereignty (state or federal government).

Forrest held up his diplomatic passport and told the WSP, "*You don't have jurisdiction.*" They were going quite slow at this time but soon sped back up to 55 MPH. Evidently, the WSP called for help on his radio because soon there were several patrol cars hanging around, with their red and blue lights flashing, trying to force Forrest to stop. None of them seemed to want to damage their own cars, though, so they kept on moving toward Oregon.

In order for there to be a violation of common law, there must be an injured party who files the complaint and brings suit. Forrest had neither endangered nor damaged anyone or their property and was merely exercising his secured right to travel, so he did his best to politely ignore the attempted deprivation of rights by the WSP.

After 50 or 60 miles of their "mini parade," the police set up a roadblock. They had a patrol car parked across each lane with only enough space in between them to allow a single lane of traffic. Forrest was following the car ahead by about three hundred feet and as soon as that car went through the gap, the police rolled a spiked mat across the gap to blow his tires (damaged party?) and force him to stop. Forrest saw this in time to drive around the back of one of the patrol cars, on the shoulder of the road. There were several surprised policemen standing around, but not for long. The next roadblock was made up of *four* cars and reached all the way to the edge of the shoulder. Luckily, the bank was neither rocky nor steep and because Forrest was going 55 MPH, he could get the car off the shoulder and back onto the road again.

Eventually, after crossing the Columbia River into Oregon, Forrest was stopped on a one-way bridge in a construction zone. When he stopped, he was instantly surrounded by policemen and looking up the barrels of cocked police pistols and revolvers. All three people in the car were hauled into court and put in front of a judge, who asked Forrest to state his name.

I have gone into detail in relating the facts of the case so you will clearly understand that Forrest had neither caused anyone any damage nor had he shown any willful or wanton disregard of public life or property. His right to free travel had been unlawfully abridged. His life had been put in danger by the roadblocks. His property had been threatened with damage by the spiked mats. He had actually been threatened with death when they stopped him. The government is our servant. The police are our servants. Merely because a policeman takes a

personal dislike to the looks of our automobile identity plate does not give that policeman the right to deprive us of our rights. The policemen have been trained to do just that!

The judge asked Forrest to state his name.

Forrest said in a very calm, sincere, and instructive voice, *"I can't do that, your Honor."*

The Judge then said, *"Is your name Forrest Givens?"*

Forrest continued, *"I'm not trying to be frivolous, your Honor, but I feel like I'm under an obligation to tell the truth here and only give first-hand knowledge of the facts. Now, I've certainly been called by the name you just said, but the officers who arrested me called me by other names, as well. I'm sure I was present at my birth, but that was a long time ago and I simply have no present and independent recollection of what my parents named me. I cannot attempt to give you my name and remain faithful to my obligation to relate only first-hand knowledge of the truth. Your "best evidence rule" would require that someone like my parents be here who could give you the information you want from first hand knowledge."*

The judge asked, *"What is your Date of Birth?"*

Forrest replied, *"Again, your Honor, I'm not trying to get smart with you or be disrespectful to this court in any way, but I don't have a 'Date of Birth'. The term 'Date of Birth' has a specific legal meaning and refers to the date that is recorded on a state-issued birth certificate. The date on that document is a 'Date of Birth'. Because I have no such birth certificate, I can have no 'Date of Birth'."*

Forrest had to go through this routine in answer to several questions before his case was dismissed. I do not have a transcript of the court proceedings, but Forrest's conversation with the judge is correct in substance.

To bring this story to an end, Forrest and his fellow church member had not broken any laws, so they were released and not charged with anything. The SSN/driver's license holder who had been sitting in the back seat had hired a lawyer and not only was he charged, but he was *convicted* and served some time in jail - *just for being a passenger!*

#### SUMMARY

Various aspects of names and identity have been explored at some length to point out several things. The first thing is, there is no safety inside the government system. I wouldn't call it "safe" if I had to serve time in jail just for being a passenger in a car doing 55 MPH on an interstate highway. The most important thing to remember is that if you make a clean break with the "small g" god of government and seek God's protection, He can and will protect you. Also important is that you need to have a certain amount of KNOWLEDGE to accomplish the kinds of victories in court that Forrest demonstrated for us.

The examples of Mr. Clarence/George Block and Forrest Givens show the importance of your name as well as how and where you use it. Americans tend to be a bit lax when it comes to their name. They depend upon their SSN more than they do their name to give continuity to their identity. Don't women keep their SSN and change their name when they marry? From the above examples, you can see how much most of us have to *un-learn* before we can catch up with Clarence and Forrest.

I would never again allow any offspring of mine to have a state birth certificate made out on them. A state-issued birth certificate is not needed to prove identity. You will never be asked for a birth certificate by anyone other than a government agency (including banks). A meticulous entry in your family Bible or any other contemporaneous family record of births, marriages, and deaths is sufficient and acceptable legal proof in any country.

How you decide to deal with the thousands of contracts you've made and cannot remember, therefore cannot break, and how you decide to deal with the problem of having ownership papers on your name sitting in some federal office is entirely up to you. What ever you decide, I would recommend praying for guidance before you make the decision and waiting for an answer that makes sense to you.

---

### More Black's Law Dictionary Definitions

**"Marriage License.** A license of permission granted by public authority to persons who intend to intermarry, ....."

**"Intermarriage.** See **Miscegenation**"

**"Miscegenation.** Mixture of races; marriage between persons of different races, as between a white person and a Negro."

**"Partus sequitur ventrem.** The offspring follows the mother; the brood of the animal belongs to the owner of the dam; the off-spring of a slave belongs to the owner of the mother, or follows the condition of the mother. A maxim of the civil law, which has been adopted in the law of England in regard to animals, though never allowed in the case of human beings."

---

"

### U.S. Supreme Court ALBERTY v. U S, 162 U.S. 499 (1896) No. 853.

April 20, 1896

Defendant, a Cherokee negro, who was known both by his father's name of Burns, and that of his former master, Alberty, was convicted of the murder of one Phil Duncan, at the Cherokee Nation, in the Indian Territory. The indictment alleged the crime to have been committed May 15, 1879, but it appeared by the evidence to have been committed in 1880.

Upon judgment of death being pronounced, defendant sued out a writ of error from this court, assigning a want of jurisdiction in the court below, and various errors in the charge to the jury connected with the law of homicide, and the inference to be drawn from the flight of the accused. [162 U.S. 499, 500] Wm. M. Cravens, for plaintiff in error.

Asst. Atty. Gen. Whitney, for the United States. Mr. Justice BROWN, after stating the facts in the foregoing language, delivered the opinion of the court.

1. The question of jurisdiction in this case demands a primary consideration. Although the prisoner, Alberty, was not a native Indian, but a negro born in slavery, it was **not disputed that he became a citizen of the Cherokee Nation**, under the **ninth article of the treaty of 1866** (14 Stat. 799, 801), by which the Cherokee Nation agreed to abolish slavery, and further agreed 'that all freedmen who have been liberated by voluntary act of their former owners or by law, as well as all free colored persons who were in the country at the commencement of the Rebellion and are now residents therein or who may return within six months, and their descendants, shall have all the rights of native Cherokees.' **While this article of the [162 U.S. 499, 501] treaty gave him the rights of a native Cherokee, it did not, standing alone, make him an Indian**, within the meaning of Rev. St. 2146, or absolve him from responsibility to the criminal laws of the United States, as was held in U. S. v. Rodgers, 4 How. 567-573, and Westmoreland v. U. S., 155 U.S. 545, 15 Sup. Ct. 243.

Duncan, the deceased, was the illegitimate child of a Choctaw Indian, by a colored woman, who was not his wife, but a slave in the Cherokee Nation. As his mother was a negro slave, under the rule, '**Partus sequitur ventrem**,' he must be treated as a negro by birth, and not as a Choctaw Indian. There is an additional reason for this in the fact that he was an **illegitimate child**, and took the **status of his mother**. Williamson v. Daniel, 12 Wheat. 568; Fowler v. Merrill, 11 How. 375."

..... Etc.

*[Author's Note: This is included so you will understand that slavery did not end with the Civil War and so you would understand that the Government actually DID claim ownership of the slaves. "All judges in all courts will be bound thereby."]*

## 18 — ¡FELIZ VIAJE! – HAVE A HAPPY TRIP

The final Chapter is a “catch-all.” There are some last minute pieces of earnest advice, there are some recommendations on what Sovereigns may do in the future, if enough people determine to seek Sovereignty, and there are warnings about a few things that you *don't* do as a Sovereign.

Do not allow your fear of politicians to stampede you into doing something out of order. In the words of Keith Anderson, “*We should not try to force a person to run to freedom when they need to walk.*” Under many conditions, it is safer to walk than to run. The only time that the appropriate strategy is to drop everything and run is when there are, *literally*, bullets flying all around you and there are people trying to kill you. If that is not the case with you, then you should *strategically* withdraw, carefully following the steps that lead toward safety and liberty.

### CONTINUE TO LEARN

Of utmost importance is to seek knowledge, especially knowledge of the law of God. You have absolutely no chance to succeed in your search for Sovereignty if you are one of those people whose life revolves around the television set. This may be *especially* true if your favorite program is C-SPAN (or is it *CFR*-SPAN?).

One step in the “dumbing down of America” is the encouragement of the public *not* to demand solid documentation upon which to base their decisions. One document circulated by the New World Order about seventy years ago says the public should be taught not to depend upon libraries, but to rely upon information which is “*generally available in their community.*” This is, “*listening to the whisperings of the neighbors.*” Is there any way you can lose your money on Wall Street *faster* than following the “conventional wisdom?” Will Rodgers said that it was not what people *did not* know that got them into trouble, it was what they knew for certain, but just *wasn't true*. What are radio talk shows if not “whisperings of the neighbors?” Solid information may be found in the Bible, in a *good* encyclopedia, in the law library, and in the dictionary. If you depend on Television, radio, and newspapers as the source for all of your knowledge, then you are going to be easily lead astray. Television, radio, and newspapers have deadlines that force errors in judgment and errors in fact.

Always go to the best source for your information and continue to ask questions. This especially applies to the book named *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL*. What I did worked for me because I looked up the laws and made copies to keep and study. I also pray a lot. I have shared places to look for some information that could motivate People to leave this bankrupt, highly taxed, tightly controlled, and “morally challenged” government and move into a jurisdiction wherein they may prosper, be relaxed, and be content. Do your own research. ***Don't trust mine!***

I would like to call attention to what I call the “central theme” (*pun intended*) of the Bible. The exact, middle verse in the KJV Bible is **Psalms 118:8**. Because it is in the center, I call it the “central theme.” The verse says, “***It is better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in man.***” That *includes* the author of this book. What I write is my best understanding of the truth. Some of what I have shared in *STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL* is good, solid **fact**. Some of it is “the whisperings of the neighbors.” If what I have said *sounds* logical to you, that does not mean you should trust *ME*. It means you should exert the effort to

determine if what I have said is *actually true*. Once *you* determine that the information *IS true*, then you may act with the courage of *your own* convictions.

### SOVEREIGNS ARE SPECIAL

In all of our future business dealings, we must be aware of whether we are dealing with a person of our jurisdiction or of another jurisdiction. In dealing with Sovereigns, we follow the rules in the Bible regarding dealing with Sovereigns. If the community of Sovereigns becomes large enough in numbers, sooner or later some of us will have servants or slaves of our own. Remember that the borrower is the servant (or slave) of the lender and that God has directed His people to be lenders and leaders not borrowers and slaves. When WE loan money, our servant (the borrower) needs to be treated as *we* would have wanted to be treated when we were slaves.

**NO!** The Golden Rule is not, "*He who has the gold makes the rules.*" The Golden Rule is, "*Do unto others as you would have them do unto you.*" This was given in the New Testament as the "*pivotal passage*" in scripture, but it is just a re-write of what's in the Old Testament. We need to be truly interested in promoting the welfare of the borrower. This is 100% contrary to the examples set by the International Banks. The Banker's goal is to entrap governments and souls of men by using *money* as bait in exactly the same way that you entrap mice by using *cheese* as bait. *Our* goal will be to assist our foreign slaves (servants of false gods who owe us money) into becoming debt-free Sovereigns. To promote debt is to promote eternal death. To promote liberation from debt is to promote eternal life.

**Debt = Death    Liberated = Life** Got it? That makes it pretty simple. We need to be single minded in our treatment of others and our standards for ourselves.

### EARNING A LIVING

The question is *always* asked, "*How will I be able to work and support my family?*" It is an important question, and in this case, there are several good answers, but first and always, pray for guidance and assistance. *Always remember to pray.* God can open doors in places where we are not even aware that there are walls. Many people will experience a radical change in conditions of employment, especially people who were previously public employees. One of the saddest things that this author hears, is information that someone has read this book and then consciously chosen to remain in public employment or in some other profession that requires a SSN. God can take care of us so much better than we can take care of ourselves, if we only trust Him.

Some scriptures to look up to help your frame of mind while on this topic are the book of **Matthew, chapters 5 -7; Ephesians 4:28; I Thessalonians 4:11 - 12; and James 1:25.** These scriptures hold a promise of results, but *we must first place ourselves in the proper position to receive* the results. God built us to be *concerned* about the welfare of our families. To help take away the *worries*, Jesus devoted ten whole verses to this subject in His sermon on the mount.

We need to remember that when God created Adam, Adam was placed in the Garden of Eden to dress and keep it. Man was created with a job to do. We were *created* for work and most of us really *enjoy* producing something. I see no promise of idleness in the Paradise to come. The picture of "Heaven" being a place where we just sit around all day playing a harp doesn't fit in with what I read in the Book. I think we will be doing something pleasant and constructive. Exactly what, I have no idea. But since we were created for work, I do not see inactivity.

God gave us our labor as a gift. God gave us the ability to prosper. In the New Testament, we are told to work so we may have extra things to give to those who are in need. This does *not* mean to give to everyone who has less than we have just to even things out

(socialism). We are blessed twice when we give to Sovereigns who, through no fault of their own, find themselves in need. The first time is when we are paid for our own labors. The second time is when God rewards us for our obedience to the commandments to give to those in need. When God's children obey His simple commandments, they are blessed beyond their wildest expectations. It is inspiring to others to watch God bless his faithful servants.

### Special Situations

Seek expert assistance if you need it. Even the most difficult labor situations have viable solutions. For instance, a doctor can only practice medicine under the name on his medical degree. A Doctor is prevented by statute from exercising his common law right to be who he says he is, at least in the practice of medicine. This is why a lady doctor will always keep her maiden name in her medical practice. You may call her by her husband's name at home, but on the prescription form, her name does not change.

A solution was found to the "Medical License Problem" for a professional partnership in Seattle where the doctor and pharmacist were totally isolated from the money/bookkeeping. They could still write and fill prescriptions yet they had no SSN's attached to anything. They had no personal tax liabilities, yet they may continue in their chosen professions. The *partnership* had only minimal tax liabilities. If you need expert assistance to address a special problem, look in **Appendix XXI** for addresses. The Professional Partnership problems were handled by using a Complex Business Organization.

### Private Contracting

Most people will find themselves working as private contractors. Most of us will work either as contract laborers or contracted professional service providers. If you are a newcomer to contracting, remember that a contract is no better than the terms stipulated in it. You learned the "down-side" of *bad* contracts in your experiences with the government. **You will not want to repeat the mistakes you made in the government contracts or to treat others the way the government treated you.**

The latest trend among the mega-businesses, like Microsoft, is to hire independent contractors instead of employees. The companies save *millions* in fringe benefits. The contractors enjoy the flexibility. As Sovereigns, we will enjoy the fact that the government does not have their hand in our pocket! The latest information from the political "spin doctors" says that there are currently over a million people earning their livings as independent contractors in jobs that have historically had an employer/employee relationship. Surprisingly, today's Sovereigns may have it easier than those who paved the way for us a decade ago. We are leading the way to a new era of prosperity.

If you really enjoy the work you are doing now, then you should attempt to convert your "employee" position into an "independent contract." If you are working for the government, it may be impossible. If you are working for a business that has accountants and lawyers on staff, then have the bosses run the idea past their accountants and lawyers. If the idea is presented to the right people in the right way, the chances are very good that the company will adopt a policy of converting all of their most productive employees to independent contractors.

**APPENDIX XXV** is an example of a contract for labor that will protect both parties from government interference. Provision number two, regarding hours worked and supervision, is very particularly worded. This provision is based upon prior court decisions, so do not change it. About all that needs to be done is to change the information that is underlined. The less you modify the provisions of this example, the better it will work for you. Pay close attention to the notes on the last page of the contract.

A short-term deal can most easily be handled with a **verbal contract**. If you already have the product in hand and you are given a verbal offer for cash, that is a **verbal contract**. Transactions at garage sales are verbal contracts. When you agree to use your four-wheel drive pickup to pull someone out of a snow bank for \$10.00, you use a **verbal contract**.

The same basic considerations of writing a contract are used in everything from ditch-digging to book-binding. You calculate the cost of material, cost of tools, cost of supplies, cost of workspace, cost of living, cost of utilities, *plus* everything that goes into your necessary profit margin. **NEVER** turn in a bid that will cost *you* money. As always, **don't forget to pray**.

### SETTING UP BANK ACCOUNTS

My best recommendation is to set up your Corporation Sole or an Offshore Trust *long before* you send your affidavits to the various bureaucrats. This is an example of walking instead of running to freedom. It gives a person much more confidence to cross the gap from man's jurisdiction to God's jurisdiction when he or she has a powerful business tool like a Corporation Sole or a Trust to use as a bridge. He can maintain more personal continuity in his living arrangements and lifestyle if he has strategically withdrawn his assets into a safe location. Be sure you have the ID you need *before* you open the bank account. Get an offshore mailing address for the Trust *before* opening the account. And remember to tell the Bank's account officer that you are opening a "passive investment" account for your offshore organization.

One of the biggest benefits of opening a bank account in a name that has no SSN is that FDIC places no limit on the amount that may be in the bank. The limits apply only to cosigners on the national debt! Un-numbered interests get their money "off the top" if the bank goes broke. The *shortages* are divided up among the slaves!

Becoming a Sovereign will take more preparation and thought than deciding which television sit-coms to watch tonight. You need to read, study, plan ahead, and develop a sound strategy if you are going to successfully withdraw from the Earthly government system. You need to decide what steps you and your family will take. You will need identification for each member of your family. Do you need to sell any property? If you have changed your name, then be sure you are carrying ID in the name that matches the deed.

### ALLIANCES

Ordinarily, I do not recommend forming groups or organizations; however, there are some notable exceptions. I will recommend forming groups for the following purposes and goals and I will explain the reasons for each in turn. Some groups with which a Sovereign could associate without compromising his Sovereignty would be:

1. a local congregation of believers (for Bible study)
2. a group of Citizens who practice home schooling
3. a court-support (SCARE) group
4. a "posse comitatus" group, and
5. a group of Citizens seeking lawful, allodial titles for their land

### Land Title Reform Group

Owning real estate with a freehold, allodial title is technically possible, but because I have not done it, I will refer you to the addresses in **Appendix XXI**. Freehold title is worth seeking, because the Constitution prohibits "**corruption of blood**." Were you taught the definition of "corruption of blood?" I was not. Among other things, "corruption of blood" means that your right to inherit property by blood relationship to your parents, can not be prevented by any government law. Because they cannot make a *LAW* to work corruption of blood, the government collects its tribute under contract. Because we did not actually become

the *owner* of the property when we agreed to pay for the privilege of living on it, we need to become the **true owner** of a plot of ground before our protection under the “corruption of blood” clause will take effect. If the government could not take away your family’s land, what would be the government’s ultimate threat to enforce building codes? Zoning ordinances? School tax? Do you see why it is worth the effort to pursue allodial title?

When pressing for allodial title to your land you *may* run into some legal stonewalling. I have been informed by a reliable source that after the default of the Latin American countries on loans guaranteed by the U. S. Government, the IMF has foreclosed on the collateral tendered by the government. That collateral was all of the allodial titles claimed by the U. S. Government. I have not taken the time to verify this because I intend to live the rest of my life on a boat, but I am passing this *rumor* on to you (and identifying it as such) for your information. In any case, where free hold title was once held in your county, you may have to spend quite a bit of time in title search and legal research to discover the way to correct your own titles. This work is best spread out among a group.

This method of securing land title reform is much better than the traditional Mexican method of having a revolution! Armed revolutions have a way of being taken over by political factions and being turned into a mere changing of the guard from one set of dictators to another. If you are successful in securing free hold title to land in your state, *please* send the author the state statutes you used and a description of how you did it.

### Church Meetings

The same word used in the New Testament to denote a Jewish **Synagogue** is used to denote a Christian **congregation**. Whereas “Synagogue” refers to the **building and people** when referring to the Jews, when used in connection with Christians it means *only people*. You can find several places in the New Testament where direction is given to greet a certain Christian “**and the church in their house.**” I see no directions given anywhere for Christians to tax their congregations for the purpose of erecting *buildings*. There are references to taking collections for *relief of the distressed*, but not for erecting costly structures.

There have always been religious groups, some with worldwide affiliations and some localized, who meet in homes. There are two branches of Amish; - House Amish and Church Amish. The House Amish, who meet in the homes of the congregation members, are considered to be the more scripturally correct of the two. Because the old saying “**charity begins at home**” is very true, it is well worth our while to examine home worship as an alternative for Sovereigns.

### Court Support Group

We definitely need the support of a **Sovereign Court Action Reporters and Enforcers (SCARE)** group. We should never allow a Sovereign to be alone when facing a government court. Court appearances will be very rare, but we *do* need to be prepared. All the USC’s and CFR’s are available on CD-ROM, but they are quite expensive. If you have a well-financed **SCARE** group, you may wish to purchase the CD-ROMs for the group to use for research.

In addition to education, a vital part of this program is to locate all the members of our **society of friends and brothers** who have the *time* to spend in court. These Sovereigns need to educate themselves on how to deal with the legal system. They will be our witnesses to keep us from being jailed for failure to appear or other trumped-up charges. Our SCARE group may be a natural result of the same group that we form to seek allodial title to our land.

## Neighborhood Watch

“**Posse Comitatus**” means, literally, “**Power of the County.**” It means that the primary enforcers of your Constitutionally protected, Sovereign Rights and Immunities are your *elected county officials*, including the county sheriff. The *best* book on posse comitatus is available from **BOHICA**, whose address is in **Appendix XXI**. “**Posse Comitatus**” does not have the same connotation as “**vigilante**” or “**armed mob.**”

The federal “*Posse Comitatus Act*” does not *permit* posse comitatus, it only describes the very limited parameters within which the federal government, with *permission* from the State Governor, may *ignore* the power of the county to govern its own affairs. The government must comply with the *Posse Comitatus Act* before it may use federal military force against American Citizens on their own land. The “*Posse Comitatus Act*” was invoked against Randy Weaver’s family near Naples, Idaho and again a few months later near Waco, Texas against the Branch Davidian Church. Both times, Federal Agents sought *and got* permission from the state governor to use federal military force to kill some of that state’s residents.

Joining a posse comitatus group is merely exercising your rights to be secure in your person, property, and papers, to peacefully assemble, and to carry armaments at the same time. A posse comitatus group does not meet to promote violence. They meet to promote peace and security in their county. They are available to the Sheriff to aid him in keeping the peace. If the sheriff refuses to perform the sworn duties of his office and allows criminal violations of human rights to take place, then it is within the duties and power of the Citizens of the county to remove that sheriff from office and cause him to stand trial in a common law court for felony breach of oath. This is lawful within both American common law and the Biblical social law.

In any event, a posse comitatus organization is not in any way connected with an *organized state militia*. Joining a state militia might even reestablish some of the old contracts we have gone to so much effort to break. Keep in mind that the organized militia is *always* under the control of the *politicians* and the posse comitatus is *always* under the control of “**We, the People.**” There seems to be a lot of confusion in the minds of many patriots. What they want is the security of posse comitatus. All the media talks about are state militias.

## Home Schooling

Home schooling is simply the exercise of your right to peacefully assemble, once you have rid yourselves and children of your obligations under Social Security to follow the plans *it* has made to take care of you in your old age. If you study the lists of laws in the **Appendix XX**, you should see how you are now free to exercise *all* of your rights because there is no law to do anything but help you.

The Bible puts the job of teaching our children on the *parents of the children*. As surely as the powers delegated to Congress in Article 1 section 8 of the Constitution cannot be delegated to the Federal Reserve, neither are we allowed to delegate to a hireling servant *our* responsibility to teach our own children. The reason to form an organization for home schooling is to share teaching materials and methods among the families. There are some excellent resources available for home-schoolers on the Internet.

## COMMON LAW COURTS

We should seek to build our numbers and influence in our communities until we reach a point where we have community-wide support for common law courts. For information on forming common law courts, write to some of the addresses in **Appendix XXI**. What good is the seventh amendment unless we have common law courts and juries to protect the Citizens in our community?

In private disputes, we always have the right to seek binding arbitration in any contractual form we choose. Arbitration has been used in the Pacific Northwest to settle disputes, but arbitration will not help us when we are dealing with a non-consenting party. We need to find a Scriptural way to deal with a belligerent aggressor against our God given rights that will restore peace to the community. The scholars in our SCARE group will be the friends to whom we turn for assistance in forming the court. Forming a court will be a social / religious task, not a political one.

### OUR LAST GOVERNMENT CONTRACT

After freeing themselves from debt and obligations under enslaving contracts, what Sovereigns now have, in addition to the protection of God, is the protection of our last remaining contract with Earthly government, the Constitution. I see no conflict between what God says in **I Samuel 8** and having a government that is our SERVANT. The Constitution is a solemn contract between "*We, the People of the united States*" and the government. *As a contract*, it is enforceable in the courts pursuant to the statutes of frauds. *As a contract*, it is to be construed most liberally in favor of the beneficiary of the contract. *As a contract*, it is to be most liberally construed in favor of a party who is non-signatory to the contract. WE did *not* sign the contract. WE are the *beneficiaries*. Since there are no signers of the Constitution now living, what makes the Constitution effective is the oath taken by public servants to uphold it. Our Rights will be enforced if we have not *given* those Rights to the government through other contracts.

PLEASE, tell me you understand that no one has taken any Rights away from you because you gave up those Rights over your own signature. Please tell me you understand that to be free, live free, and have the government work for you instead of against you, all you have to do is *void the contracts*.

### GOD'S CONTRACT WITH US

The ultimate remedy for slavery is most elegantly expressed in **II Chronicles 7:12-22**. In verse 14, God says, "*If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then I will hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their LAND.*" (emphasis added) This reads like a solemn contract, doesn't it?

In **Isaiah 11:6** God promises a time and place in the future where "*the wolf shall also dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them.*" In keeping with the principle that the Bible should be interpreted literally in all cases unless it very obviously calls for a symbolic interpretation, this passage must be interpreted symbolically. To me, the passage explains and resolves the questions and controversy among Christian seminary students regarding the location and activities of the Devil during the Millennium, prior to **Revelations 20:7**. My current understanding is that the relationship between **Isaiah 11:6** and **Rev. 20:7** explains the separations of jurisdictions that I see in the world around me. The evil forces in the world will be right here among us (wolf & lamb, leopard & kid, calf & lion), but due to the separate jurisdictions, the Evil One will be restrained from harming us. Our obligation to perform and God's obligation to protect us are as stated in the contract in **II Chronicles 7:14**.

And now may the blessings of Heaven be bestowed upon us and all of God's obedient children, may brotherly love prevail, and every moral and social virtue cement us. Amen

*¡Feliz viaje!*

## USING THE SUGGESTED AFFIDAVITS AND NOTICES

The following Affidavits and Notices are *suggestions*. They are carefully written so it will be difficult, if not impossible, to merely Xerox them, white out the names, and write in your own name and data. The numbers and dates should be written out in words. These documents must be typed from scratch. For an outrageous fee, you may also purchase them on a computer disk and extensively edit them to remove all irrelevant and inappropriate data, substituting your own pertinent information. This was done to protect you, my friends, from the same natural, inherent, human laziness that caused us to slumber our way into the chains of government slavery in the first place! The more actively you research the laws, the more you will understand and enjoy your Liberty.

### LAWS, RULES, AND REGULATIONS

All laws, rules, and regulations cited should be looked up and copied before you compose your affidavit. The IRS/SSA is more likely to leave you alone if they know that you have based your affidavits on your own knowledge of the law. *MY* knowledge of the *law* does not protect you from the IRS any more than my salvation can protect Jan Reno from Hell's fire. As stated in the introduction, it is inherent in the nature of Sovereignty that the Sovereign must be able to stand on his own two feet. **DO NOT DEPEND ON THIS BOOK** to be a source of accurate law. Those books are in your law library. Use the library.

### ADDRESSES FOR INFORMATION ACCESS

All addresses and annotations are believed to be correct at the time of publishing. Addresses and details change, so you must again *exercise your Sovereignty* by taking responsibility for your own access to information. My experience is very limited, having lived only part of one lifetime. If we have the opportunity to meet, it is very likely that you will discover that you have as much to teach me as I have to teach you. Use the best information you have. The author is not a perfect man nor is he a perfect source of information.

### SCRIPTURAL REFERENCES

REMINDER: Please look up *all* of the references to Bible verses. Not all of them are mentioned in the text of the book but they are important to your understanding of Sovereignty.

## I — Affidavit of Citizenship

# **AFFIDAVIT OF EARTHLY OCCUPANCY**

COMES NOW (your full name), the affiant, who is of lawful age and sound mind, who is a competent witness and is telling the truth, voluntarily relating the following first hand knowledge of the facts and stating that these facts are true and represent the best of my knowledge.

I was born on December seventh, in the year of our Lord on thousand nine hundred forty one in Greenbank, Island County, Washington Republic, united States of America. I am the son/daughter of (father) and the son/daughter of (mother[maiden name]). I am not now nor have I ever been a British subject. My parents are not now nor have they ever been British subjects.

My Citizenship is in Heaven as per Philippians Chapter three, verse twenty. Heaven is my eternal home and I am under the exclusive jurisdiction of the King of Kings and Lord of Lords. [Old Testament adherents cite Job 19:25-27, and say something like, "God's Kingdom is my eternal home and my Citizenship is in God's Kingdom as per: Job 19:25-27."]

I am a Judicial Power Occupant of (state of your birth) Republic, and I am thereby claiming all the Rights, privileges, and immunities recognized in the Constitution for (state of your birth) Republic, which is a binding contract upon the government of Washington Republic and enforceable in the courts under the statutes of frauds.

This Affidavit of Occupancy functions as a NOTICE in compliance with fifteen Statutes at Large, Chapter two hundred forty-nine (Section one), of July twenty-seventh, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred sixty eight, and serves as notice for all government employees that the below signed Citizen of Heaven may legally and lawfully expatriate from the jurisdiction of the United States.

By virtue of being a Sovereign, Judicial Power Occupant on the soil in the portion of the continent of North America commonly known as Washington Republic, I am also a Judicial Power Occupant of the united States of America and empowered with all of the Rights, privileges, and immunities recognized in the Constitution for the united States, which Constitution is a binding contract upon the government of the United States and is enforceable in the courts under the statutes of frauds.

I am not, nor have I ever been a citizen or subject of the United States, nor any of them, as contemplated by the so-called fourteenth amendment of the Constitution for the united States.

I am not, nor have I ever knowingly and voluntarily been a resident of the United States nor of any political subdivision within the United States.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year).

Harrold P. Snodgrass, Sui Juris

#### ACKNOWLEDGMENT

Harrold P. Snodgrass, the undersigned, who is personally known by me or upon proper identification, did appear before me this day and sign the within instrument in my presence and for the purposes therein stated.

Signed this day, \_\_\_\_\_, at \_\_\_\_ (city) \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_ (state) \_\_\_\_\_.

\_\_\_\_\_ My commission expires on: \_\_\_\_\_.

II — Revoke Signature, 1040's

**AFFIDAVIT**

**REVOCAION OF SIGNATURE, FOR GOOD CAUSE**

COMES NOW (your full name), the affiant, who is of lawful age and sound mind, who is a competent witness and is telling the truth, voluntarily relating the following first hand knowledge of the facts and stating that these facts are true and represent the best of my knowledge.

Because the Internal Revenue Service, through false information, concealment of information, disinformation, misinformation, and misdirection has intentionally mislead me into believing that I had a legal duty of providing them with information, I am hereby revoking my signature, for good cause, off of all filings of their "Form 1040" and associated forms which I have filed between the year 1964 through 1998 and those forms are hereby made void, ab initio.

I was misinformed and misled into believing that there was a legal requirement to have a Social Security Number before I could legally exchange my labor for compensation. Deliberate misrepresentation of the facts by the Internal Revenue Service has caused damage upon my property and my rights, which is fraud by the Internal Revenue Service. I have revoked, rescinded, repudiated, and rejected the power of appointment of the Internal Revenue Service. I am neither eligible for benefits by nor liable for the debts of the United States Government.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year).

\_\_\_\_\_  
Harrold P. Snodgrass, Sui Juris

**ACKNOWLEDGMENT**

Harrold P. Snodgrass, the undersigned, who is personally known by me or upon properly identification, did appear before me this day and sign the within instrument in my presence and for the purposes therein stated.

Signed this day, \_\_\_\_\_, at \_\_\_(city) \_\_\_\_, \_\_\_( state )\_\_.

SEAL

\_\_\_\_\_  
Notary Public

My commission expires on: \_\_\_\_\_.

**NOTE:** this goes to: **Department of the Treasury**  
**Internal Revenue Service**  
**Philadelphia, Pennsylvania 19255**

### III — Revoke Signature, Bank Card

# AFFIDAVIT

## REVOCAION OF SIGNATURE, FOR GOOD CAUSE

COMES NOW (your full name), the affiant, who is of lawful age and sound mind, who is a competent witness and is telling the truth, voluntarily relating the following first hand knowledge of the facts and stating that these facts are true and represent the best of my knowledge.

I hereby revoke my signature, for cause, from the "Signature Card" signed on (date) when I opened (Check/Save) account # \_\_\_\_\_ at Stickumup International Bank, \_\_\_\_\_ branch, 7734 Cheatum Street, Robumblind, Illinois.

I am hereby and herein demanding the delivery of the signature card into my custody.

Conditions that justify revocation of signature, are various elements of fraud including, but not limited by, fraud in the inducement. The full particulars of the contract that I was signing were not available for my inspection nor were the full particulars of the contract ever at any time offered for my inspection.

Through fraud by concealment, I was misled into believing the form was for a different purpose than that for which the form is actually used.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year).

\_\_\_\_\_  
Harrold P. Snodgrass, Sui Juris

#### ACKNOWLEDGMENT

The within instrument was signed before me this day, \_\_\_\_\_, at \_\_\_\_\_, Alaska.

SEAL

\_\_\_\_\_  
**Notary Public**

My commission expires on: \_\_\_\_\_.

**DON'T INCLUDE THIS NOTE:** You need to make one of these for each bank account you have used for the past seven years. Send it with a cover letter.

ALSO:

Addresses for U.S. Atty General and U.S. Secretary of State, for use on appropriate documents.

Attorney General \_\_\_\_\_  
950 Pennsylvania Ave. N.W.  
Washington, DC 20530

U. S. Secretary of State \_\_\_\_\_  
22 C Street N.W.  
Washington, DC 20520

IV — Revoke Signature, SS-5

**AFFIDAVIT**

**REVOCAATION OF SIGNATURE, FOR CAUSE**

COMES NOW (your full name), the affiant, who is of lawful age and sound mind, who is a competent witness and is telling the truth, voluntarily relating the following first hand knowledge of the facts and stating that these facts are true and represent the best of my knowledge.

I hereby revoke my signature, for cause, from the "Form SS-5, Application for a Social Security Card" signed on (**date**) when I applied for benefits from the Social Security Administration and from the "Form SS-5, Application for a Social Security Card" signed on (date) when I applied for a replacement for a lost card.

The original Form SS-5 contract was entered into when I was **fourteen (YOUR)** years of age, which means the contract is null and void because I lacked legal capacity for signing a binding contract.

\*\*\*\* Because the application for a replacement card depended upon the validity of the first application and was signed under economic duress, the application for a replacement card is also null and void. \*\*\*\* [use this if you have applied for a replacement card]

Because a contract is only valid if entered into knowingly and voluntarily, both contracts are null and void because of coercion through misinformation, disinformation, misdirection, and threats of economic duress.

Because fraud vitiates contracts and even judgments, these contracts are null and void through various elements of fraud.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year).

Harrold P. Snodgrass, Sui Juris

**ACKNOWLEDGMENT**

The within instrument was signed before me this day, \_\_\_\_\_, at \_\_\_\_\_, (State).

**SEAL**

\_\_\_\_\_  
**Notary Public**

My commission expires on: \_\_\_\_\_.

V — Release from Social Security

# AFFIDAVIT

## RELEASE OF APPOINTMENT

COMES NOW (your full name), the affiant, who is of lawful age and sound mind, who is a competent witness and is telling the truth, voluntarily relating the following first hand knowledge of the facts and stating that these facts are true and represent the best of my knowledge.

I was born on \_\_\_\_\_ in \_\_\_\_\_ Republic, the offspring of \_\_\_\_\_ and the child of \_\_\_\_\_ [\_\_\_\_\_]. I am not now and never have been a British subject. My parents are not now and have never been British subjects.

This Release of Appointment functions as a NOTICE in compliance with 15 Statutes at Large, Chapter 249 (Section 1), July 27, 1868 and serves as notice for all government employees that the below signed Citizen may legally and lawfully expatriate from the jurisdiction of the United States into the Jurisdiction of a Sovereign State and claim State Citizenship.

This is a Release of Appointment made under the Pennsylvania Code Title 20 section 6103, et seq. and constitutes a Rescission of Contract.

At the age of \_\_\_\_\_ years, I was misinformed that the law required that I have a Social Security Card before I could be compensated for my labor. I applied for a Social Security Card and was issued the number \_\_\_\_\_.

The contract that resulted in the issuance of the above Social Security Number is invalid because I did not have legal capacity at \_\_\_\_\_ years of age for signing a binding contract.

One of the purposes of Social Security Act was the assistance of the United States in the efforts toward remedying the condition of bankruptcy. Whereas, over sixty (60) years have passed after the initiation of the Social Security Act with no progress being made toward ending the condition of bankruptcy AND whereas it is a well established evidentiary presumption that any sane person intends the natural and probable results of their deliberate acts, then I have the right of presuming that the administrators of the Social Security Act are either insane or intentionally committing fraud. Whereas, the presumption is that either one or the other of the foregoing scenarios is true, the contract resulting in the above Social Security Number is null and void, either through lack of capacity on the part of the Social Security Administration by reason of insanity or by lack of enforceability through fraud.

Because the supreme Court has determined that fraud vitiates the most solemn contracts and even judgments, the Social Security Card that was issued bearing my name is null and void, ab initio, as if it had never been issued because of fraud by the Social Security Administration.

John Coffman is hereby and herein completely released out of the Social Security contract under Pennsylvania Code Title 20 Section 6103(a) with consideration paid over for John Coffman by the Social Security Trust Fund of all money and funds that have been paid into the Social Security Trust Fund on behalf of John Coffman. Said release is absolute under Pennsylvania Code Title 20 Section 6103(b) and upon fulfillment of consideration by the Social

Security Trust Fund, the Social Security Administration is conditionally released out of all obligations on behalf of John Coffman, without consideration for the Social Security Administration under Pennsylvania Code Title 20 Section 6103(a) and (b).

I am hereby demanding that all monies that have been paid into the Social Security Trust Fund on my behalf be withdrawn and delivered into my possession within thirty (30) days. Failure in delivery of all monies or funds paid into the Social Security Trust Fund on behalf of the Claimant will be deemed as permission granted by the administrator of the Social Security Trust Fund for suing the said administrators of the Social Security Trust Fund in their personal capacities in a court of competent jurisdiction. If the benefits are not delivered into possession of the Claimant, in full, within thirty days of delivery of this AFFIDAVIT, then the presumption is valid that the Social Security Trust Fund can not pay because they are bankrupt. Failure in delivery of funds and money due for John Coffman within thirty days is deemed a waiver of all defenses, including but not limited by, affirmative defense, legal defense, meritorious defense, partial defense, peremptory defense, personal defense, real defense, or equitable defense by the Social Security Administration as well as the Principal and agents of the Social Security Administration. Notice to Principal is notice to Agents. Notice to Agent is notice to Principal.

Your Social Security Card enclosed returned for cancellation.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year).

\_\_\_\_\_  
John Coffman, Sui Juris

#### ACKNOWLEDGMENT

John Coffman, the undersigned, who is personally known by me or upon proper identification, did appear before me this day and sign the within instrument in my presence and for the purposes therein stated.

Signed this day, \_\_\_\_\_, at \_\_\_(city) \_\_\_\_, \_\_\_( state )\_\_.

SEAL

\_\_\_\_\_  
Notary Public

My commission expires on: \_\_\_\_\_.

**NOTE: This will normally fit on one page if the body of the affidavit is printed in Times New Roman, type size 8 or 9.**

VI — Revoke Trust on Autos

**AFFIDAVIT**  
**REVOCAION OF TRUST**

COMES NOW (your full name), the affiant, who is of lawful age and sound mind, who is a competent witness and is telling the truth, voluntarily relating the following first hand knowledge of the facts and stating that these facts are true and represent the best of my knowledge.

*Whereas* the Constitution for Washington State prohibits the state government from making any irrevocable trusts in Article 1 Section 8; and, [USE YOUR STATE CONSTITUTION]

*Whereas* this affidavit constitutes a Release of Appointment under Revised Code of Washington, section 11.95.030; and, [USE YOUR STATE CODE]

*Whereas* the State of Washington Motor Vehicles Department operates as a trust/holding company which has custody of the title of the Ford F-250 pickup associated with the Vehicle Identification Number (VIN) ##### and has done so without declaring the true nature of the trusteeship;

*Therefore*, because failure of disclosing the true, trustor/trustee relationship constitutes fraud and forfeiture of trust, I am hereby REVOKING THE TRUSTEESHIP of any and all government agencies over the automobile associated with the above-named VIN and will henceforth operate the automobile under the family automobile doctrine while exercising my rights as a Sovereign American Citizen of traveling freely and unencumbered on the public thoroughfares of Washington Republic and the united States of America; and,

*Therefore*, because any attempts at restricting my right of free passage will be a violation of my secured rights and immunities as a Sovereign and because the Constitution for Washington State stipulates that all political power emanates from the People, the Motor Vehicles Department must immediately inform the Washington State Patrol that they must not inhibit free passage of my automobile or be in contempt of the Constitution; and,

**THEREFORE**, neglect by the Washington State in making such corrections in the records as demanded in the within instrument that result in a trespass against the rights and immunities of Harold P. Snodgrass constitutes a waiver of all defenses, including but not limited by, affirmative defense, legal defense, meritorious defense, partial defense, peremptory defense, personal defense, real defense, or equitable defense by the Washington State as well as the Principal and agents of the Washington State. Notice to Principal is notice to Agents. Notice to Agent is notice to Principal.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year).

Harrold P. Snodgrass, Sui Juris

ADD NOTARY BLOCK AS SHOWN ON OTHER EXAMPLES

## VII — Cover Letter, IRS

Harrold P. Snodgrass  
Sui Juris  
vs.  
Department of the Treasury  
Internal Revenue Service  
Philadelphia, Pennsylvania 19255  
respondents

### NOTICE AND DEMAND

**Whereas**, the Internal Revenue Service (IRS) has received notice of revocation of signature off of all my past filings of their Forms 1040 and associated forms; and,

**Whereas**, the IRS has also received a copy of my RELEASE OF APPOINTMENT from the obligations and restrictions placed upon my person through the Social Security Administration via the instrument known as the Social Security Card number 534-41-0666, such RELEASE OF APPOINTMENT making me no longer an instrumentality of the United States or a person presumed as being under the jurisdiction of the United States as contemplated in the so-called 14<sup>th</sup> amendment of the Constitution for the united States; and,

**Whereas**, the IRS has received my Notice of Expatriation, giving notice under Fifteen Statutes at Large, two hundred forty-nine, that I am leaving the jurisdiction of the federal government of the United States and claiming jurisdiction of \_\_\_\_\_ Republic, which is where I wish to live; and

**Whereas**, I am now free of legal disability.

**THEREFORE**, as public servants, you must, by oath, and either honor your trust and govern yourselves accordingly, or resign from office; and,

**THEREFORE**, the IRS must not use the voided and rescinded Social Security Number for identifying me in any way; and,

**THEREFORE**, the IRS must not relate with my person, papers, or property in any other manner than as prescribed under American Common Law; and,

**THEREFORE**, neglect by the Internal Revenue Service in making such corrections in the records as demanded in the within instrument that result in a trespass against the rights and immunities of Harold P. Snodgrass is deemed a waiver of all defenses, including but not limited by, affirmative defense, legal defense, meritorious defense, partial defense, peremptory defense, personal defense, real defense, or equitable defense by the Internal Revenue Service as well as the Principal and agents of the Internal Revenue Service. Notice to Principal is notice to Agents. Notice to Agent is notice to Principal.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year).

**FINISH AS SHOWN ON OTHER EXAMPLES**

VIII — Cover Letter, Banks

Harrold P. Snodgrass  
Sui Juris  
vs.  
Stickemup International Bank  
respondents

**NOTICE AND DEMAND**

Whereas, you have received the affidavit revoking my signature off of the signature card associated with checking/savings account # \_\_\_\_\_; and,

Whereas, you have been notified that since the day of closure of the above-numbered account you no longer have my permission for disclosing any information about me or my business affairs unto any person or persons whomsoever, this includes but is not limited by agents of quasi-governmental agencies like the Internal Revenue Service; and,

Whereas, any such disclosure of my personal affairs constitutes a violation of my Constitutionally secured right of security of my person, my property, and my papers;

THEREFORE, Stickemup International Bank, its agents, and its employees are hereby and herein placed on constructive notice that any deprivation of my secured rights will result in this document being used as evidence of intent in seeking a default judgment against the aforesaid persons in district court of the united States under Title 18 USC and Title 42 USC for deprivation of rights in the amount of \$10,000,000.00.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year).

\_\_\_\_\_  
Harrold P. Snodgrass, Sui Juris

**Notary**

The within instrument was signed before me this day, \_\_\_\_\_, at \_\_\_\_\_, Alaska.

\_\_\_\_\_  
Notary Public  
My commission expires on: \_\_\_\_\_.

## IX — Cover Letter, SSA

Harrold P. Snodgrass  
Claimant; Sui Juris  
  
vs.  
Social Security Administration  
respondents

### NOTICE AND DEMAND

**Whereas**, the Social Security Administration (SSA) is in possession of Harold P. Snodgrass's Affidavit of Earthly Citizenship and *Instrument of Release* showing release of appointment over the person and property of Harold P. Snodgrass; and,

**Whereas**, said release is accompanied by the Social Security Card #534-41-0666 for cancellation of number by the Social Security Administration; and,

**Whereas**, upon receipt of the above-named legal Instruments the Social Security Administration becomes the holder in due course of those instruments; and,

**Whereas**, upon delivery for Harold P. Snodgrass of all deposits made into the Social Security Trust Fund on behalf of Harrold P. Snodgrass, the Social Security Administration is released from performance on all obligations under contract; and,

**Whereas**, Harold P. Snodgrass is thereby released out of performance on all of Harold P. Snodgrass's obligations under said contract; and,

**Whereas**, Harold P. Snodgrass is no longer either identified with or by the revoked Social Security Number; any attempt of using Social Security Number 534-41-0666 for identifying Harold P. Snodgrass is fraud on the part of any person or agency using Social Security Number 534-41-0666 for such purposes; and,

**Whereas**, the SSA has received my Notice of Expatriation, giving notice under Fifteen Statutes at Large Two hundred forty-nine that I am leaving the jurisdiction of the federal government of the United States and claiming expatriation into \_\_\_\_\_ Republic, which is where I live.

**THEREFORE**, any use of the Social Security Number to identify Harold P. Snodgrass is a deprivation of rights of life, liberty, and property and a violation of security of the person, property, and papers of Harold P. Snodgrass; and

**THEREFORE**, because all public servants must, by oath, uphold laws made under the Constitution as the Supreme Law of the Land, please either honor your trust and govern yourselves accordingly, or resign from office; and

**THEREFORE**, I am hereby DEMANDING that all benefits paid into the Social Security Trust Fund on my behalf be withdrawn and delivered into my possession within thirty (30) days of the date of receipt of this notice by the Social Security Administration. If the benefits are not delivered into my possession, in full, within thirty days of your receipt of this Constructive Notice and Demand, then it is presumed that the Social Security Trust Fund can not pay because they are bankrupt. Failure in delivery of the demanded funds into possession of Claimant within thirty days constitutes a waiver of all defenses including but not limited by, affirmative defense, legal defense, meritorious defense, partial defense, peremptory defense, personal defense, real defense, or equitable defense by the Social Security Administration as well as the Principal and agents of the Social Security Administration; and

**Add the penalty, signature, and notary block as shown on other examples**

**X — Cover Letter for Autos**

Harrold P. Snodgrass  
Sui Juris  
vs.  
Washington State Motor Vehicles Dept.  
respondents

**NOTICE AND DEMAND**

**Whereas,** Washington State Motor Vehicles Department has received my Revocation of Trust which has removed the 1984 Ford F-250 pickup VIN ##### out of their trusteeship; and,

**Whereas,** the aforesaid pickup will hereafter be used on the public thoroughfares of Washington State under the family automobile doctrine; and,

**Whereas,** among the duties of Washington State Motor Vehicles Department is the keeping of records on vehicles registered in trust and the publishing of those records for other agencies of the state including, but not limited by, the Washington State Patrol and other policing agencies; and,

**Whereas,** it is within the powers of the Washington State Motor Vehicles Department of taking action for prevention a deprivation of my rights of travel freely and unencumbered on the public thoroughfares of Washington Republic by causing an entry in the record that the above-described Ford Pickup is released out of State Trust and is lawfully using the public thoroughfares under the family automobile doctrine.

**THEREFORE,** as public servants, you must, under your own oath, uphold the Constitution as the Supreme Law of the Land so please either honor your trust and govern yourselves accordingly, or resign from office; and,

**THEREFORE,** neglect or refusal by Washington State Motor Vehicles Department in making such entries in the records published for the Washington State Patrol and other State and National law enforcement agencies that results in the operator and/or occupants of the above-described Ford Pickup being delayed, detained, or otherwise denied free and unencumbered right of travel on the public thoroughfares constitutes a waiver of all defenses, including but not limited by, affirmative defense, legal defense, meritorious defense, partial defense, peremptory defense, personal defense, real defense, and/or equitable defense.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year).

**ADD SIGNATURE AND NOTARY BLOCK AS SHOWN ON OTHER EXAMPLES**

**PUBLIC NOTICE – FOR PUBLICATION IN NEWSPAPER**

Your Name \_\_\_\_\_  
Claimant  
v.  
Internal Revenue Service  
Social Security Administration  
State of ( \_\_\_\_\_ )  
United States Government  
Respondents

Affidavit – Release of  
Power of Appointment

COMES NOW ( claimant ), the affiant, who is of lawful age and sound mind, who is a competent witness and after first being sworn, is telling the truth and voluntarily relating the following first hand knowledge of the facts and that these facts are true and represent the best of my knowledge.

I, \_\_\_\_\_, hereby declare that due to various elements of fraud, lack of capacity, mistake, and/or lack of competency, the Social Security Number ####-##-####, Birth Certificate, [Marriage Licenses], driver’s licenses, and all other state-issued permits and licenses that were bestowed upon me are declared rescinded and void. I am not obligated on any bankruptcy of the United States. I am not a United States citizen. I am not a British subject. I am a Citizen of Heaven as per Philippians chapter three, verse twenty. ( Claimant ) is a Judicial Power Occupant of the portion of the planet earth that is commonly called the united States of America, \_\_\_\_\_ Republic, and \_\_\_\_\_ County. [township, etc. if it applies].

( claimant ) is hereby serving release of appointment Affidavits and Notices upon the Social Security Administration and the Internal Revenue Service. Claimant is hereby serving revocation of signature affidavits and notice upon the Internal Revenue Service, revoking my signature off of all forms 1040 and associated forms that I have filed with the Internal Revenue Service. ( claimant ) is hereby releasing all government agencies out of all powers of appointment. ( claimant ) is the absolute owner of all property claimed and owned by ( claimant ).

Failure by Respondents of responding within thirty days of the last published date of this public notice with just cause for retention of rights of ownership of the Claimant and Claimant’s property by the Respondents constitutes a waiver of all defenses, including but not limited by, affirmative defense, legal defense, meritorious defense, partial defense, peremptory defense, personal defense, real defense, and/or equitable defense by the Respondents.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this ( date ) day of ( month ) in the year of our Lord ( year ).

Signed: \_\_\_\_\_ date: \_\_\_\_\_

Subscribed and affirmed before me this \_\_\_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_\_ in the Year of our Lord \_\_\_\_\_.

\_\_\_\_\_  
Notary Public date: \_\_\_\_\_

My commission expires on: \_\_\_\_\_

## SERVING PUBLIC NOTICE

The PUBLIC NOTICE that is printed on the facing page is required in states (like California) where there is an apparent effort by the state to place as many stumbling blocks in our path as possible [Luke 11:52]. In these states, it is no longer possible to record your affidavits with the county recorder and deliver NOTICE by construction. In California and elsewhere, we must now either serve actual notice or Public Notice. Public Notice will be available until the NWO realizes that we are spreading the word better through the newspapers than we were by the other methods.

### THE PROCESS

The process is much the same as without public notice. You follow the procedures up to the point of recording the documents. You skip recording the documents and go direct to serving written, actual NOTICE on all parties. Have the PUBLIC NOTICE printed at your nearest (or cheapest) newspaper. The notice is usually published in font size #6. You can say a lot in a small space in font size #6! Post the Notices to the agencies on the last day that it runs in the newspaper.

The public notice process varies from state to state, but substantially, the requirements are that you have a notarized statement in a particular format [*you must do your own legwork on this*] and you pay for publication. Publication is not cheap. In addition to the large size of the notice, it usually must be published on at least three different dates. After the notice is published, the newspaper will send you a photo-copy of the notice and a notarized statement that the notice was published on those certain dates. The day that you receive your publishing affidavit from the newspaper, you add a Xerox of their affidavit to your envelopes and drop all of your notices in the post office box, - then celebrate!

### Other suggested modifications to the affidavits and notices.

These alternative paragraphs are offered for people who wish to avoid a confrontational posture in the affidavits and notices, as well as for those who wish to conform more closely with the scriptural prohibition against "swearing" and taking oaths.

#### First paragraph of affidavit:

COMES NOW (name), the affiant, who is of lawful age and sound mind, who is a competent witness and is telling the truth, voluntarily relating the following first hand knowledge of the facts and stating that these facts are true and represent the best of my knowledge.

#### Penalty clause in Notice:

THEREFORE, neglect or refusal by Washington DMV in making such entries in the records published for the WSP and other law enforcement agencies that result in the operator and/or occupants of the above-described automobile being delayed, detained, or otherwise denied free and unencumbered right of travel along the public thoroughfares constitutes a waiver of all defenses, including but not limited by affirmative defense, legal defense, meritorious defense, partial defense, peremptory defense, personal defense, real defense, and/or equitable defense.

#### Perjury Statement

Before Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth in accord with the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year). [*All numbers are written out as words.*]

## XI — District Director Letter

Mr. \_\_\_\_\_  
District Director, Internal Revenue Service

\_\_\_\_\_ [ ]

District Director;

Some questions have arisen at our firm regarding withholding of Social Security Tax and income taxes. This letter is an attempt at engaging your assistance in determining what the law actually allows or does not allow. Because some questions have arisen about the true meaning of several pivotal terms used within the Internal Revenue Code, I am phrasing my questions in plain English and I must respectfully request that you respond with a simple “yes” or “no” answer to each of my questions. As I know that you are busy, I have designed this letter that it also acts as your response. Simply mark the correct box provided after each question, sign your name in the space provided at the bottom of the page, and return the letter.

**Question #1:** Our firm is located in California. If a Citizen of one of the 50 union states, who is working for me/us, does not possess a Social Security number, and will not sign a Form W4, do I/we have the legal authority for withholding any tax described within the Internal Revenue Code?  Yes  No

**Question #2:** If you have answered “yes” to Question #1, and I/we withhold funds out of this Citizen’s compensation without possessing a signed Form W4, will the IRS guarantee my/our firm immunity from the consequences of criminal and/or civil prosecution?”  Yes  No

In light of the outcome of the “Taco Bell Case” [EEOC v. ICS, Case# CA3-92-0169T], it is very important that we receive an accurate answer for Question #2.

Please respond within 30 days. If there is no response by you within 30 days, the presumption prevails that no authority exists for withholding any tax described in the Internal Revenue Code without a signed Form W4 and I will cease withholding funds out of the pay of the Citizens that have refused to sign the Forms W-4.

Thank you for your assistance.

Sincerely,

**↓ IRS - sign here before returning ↓**

The answers provided above are true and correct. Signed under penalty of perjury under the laws of the United States of America.

\_\_\_\_\_  
, IRS District Director

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date

## XII — NO WITHHOLDING LETTER

The letter on page 136 has proven useful in many situations for encouraging sympathetic employers not to withhold IRS and FICA from wages of workers. In addition to this letter, when discussing this subject with your employer, you might have at hand a copy of an application for employment at a Taco Bell restaurant, which shows that the giving of a SSN is *optional*. It would also be very strong support if you could obtain a copy of the "Taco Bell" case. Just having it should be sufficient support. The boss might not even look at it, once he sees the application for employment at Taco Bell. If you have a computer, you have access to the case. I have it in .zip format and can send it via e-mail.

The format for letter should be made up in advance, with the District Director's name and address. The letter needs to be *copied onto the company letterhead* and sent to the District Director via certified mail. It would help if you had someone do a **certificate of mailing**.

**First**, you must not under any condition sign the withholding form W-4. **NEVER**. Not even *conditionally*, with UCC 1-207, or "without prejudice". Just don't do it! If you sign it, you lose.

**Second**, show the boss the Taco Bell employment application and the Taco Bell Decision. If he says something like, "*If you will not give me a SSN then you can always work at Taco Bell*" then remind him that Taco Bell spent a lot of money and time in fighting the case, and **LOST!** Also, all you are asking for is an opportunity to work at a job for which you are qualified, you are not looking for a lawsuit.

**Third**, offer to work for the **thirty days** that they are giving the District Director for response if the employer will place your "withholding" in an envelope in the company safe and **give it to you** when the District Director fails to respond.

**Fourth**, IRS District Directors are too smart to: **A)** answer the letters falsely and **B)** sign *anything* under penalty of perjury, so there will most likely be no response to the letter. In all of the times that this letter has been used, there has not been even *one* response by the IRS.

The incomplete, edited text of the EEOC v. Taco Bell briefs an order (reduced to 46 pages) is available from Gamaliel for the cost of printing and posting. It is entirely up to you whether you wish to prosecute a potential employer that refuses to hire you. In any case, we wish you the best of fortune.

Please remember to pray before you go in for the job interview.



## SOCIAL SECURITY

June 10, 1998

This is in response to your correspondence about the Social Security program. People cannot voluntarily end their participation in the program. The payment of Social Security taxes is mandatory, regardless of the citizenship or place of residence of either the employer or the employee. Unless specifically exempt by law, everyone working in the United States is required to pay Social Security taxes.

Similarly, people cannot withdraw the Social Security taxes that they have already paid. Social Security taxes paid by employees and employers are not placed in individual accounts but are pooled to pay benefits to eligible workers and their families. Benefits are paid only on the basis of a voluntary application.

The Social Security Administration (SSA) is required by law (at section 205 of the Social Security Act) to maintain records of workers' earnings and to establish any other records necessary to carry out our responsibilities under the Social Security Act. Because many people have the same name, or change their name, a reliable and permanent system was needed to distinguish one individual from another in our records. The Social Security account number system was established to meet that need.

The constitutionality of the Social Security system, as established by the Social Security Act, and mandatory individual participation have already been decided by the Supreme Court. We will not respond further to your correspondence about voluntary participation in the Social Security program or the withdrawal of Social Security taxes.

The Internal Revenue Service has jurisdiction over the issue of liability for Social Security taxes; the Immigration and Naturalization Service has jurisdiction over the issue of citizenship. If you have questions about either of those subjects, you should contact one of those Agencies.

Sincerely,

Charles H. Mullen  
Associate Commissioner  
Office of Public Inquiries

### XIII — Social Security Response

On the facing page is a response toward the filing of Release of Appointment documents by the Social Security Administration. Please take note of the clever wording in their response.

In the second sentence of the first paragraph, it refers to “voluntarily end their participation” in the program. The Release of Appointment and Rescission of Contract document effectively unmake the Social Security contract “from the beginning.” This is not ending the participation, as the entire contract is now void from the beginning, i.e., ab initio.

Sentence number three predicates the mandatory nature of the taxes upon the condition of being an “employer” or an “employee.” The definitions of these words are tightly controlled and defined in the Internal Revenue Code and refer only to a holder of an Employer Identification Number or a Social Security Number. One may have as many people working for them as they wish, but if they have no Employer Identification Number (EIN), then they are not an “employer” within the meaning of the code. One may work and receive a master’s wages, but if he has no Social Security Number, he is merely a laborer, not an employee. The sentence is misleading, but correct. It does not apply to a Sovereign.

Sentence Number four refers to working in the United States. Again, true but misleading. When we are no longer residents of their forum, we may work anywhere in America and not be “within the United States.”

Paragraph two, sentence two is an open admission that the Social Security System is a Ponzi Scheme.

Paragraph three is irrelevant. This paragraph refers to taxpayers, not non-taxpayers.

The Supreme Court has decided on whether or not participation is mandatory, but the conclusion was that it is NOT mandatory. The implication that the Supreme Court decided that it is mandatory is misleading, at best. See EEOC v. Taco Bell. The implication in paragraph four, sentence number one contradicts their own letters saying that the Social Security System is voluntary. It contradicts the result of EEOC vs. Taco Bell. If this is not an overt attempt at misleading, then let them say so clearly!

Paragraph four, sentence number two is the recognition of release and a denial of liability for returning your money and funds taken by fraud. They are saying (between the lines) that you will have to sue them in order to recover the money taken through fraud by the Social Security Ponzi Scheme.

Paragraph number five is irrelevant. It deals with nothing that effects an American National, State Citizen, or Earthly Occupant.

Those of you who receive letters like this should celebrate! By not responding to your allegations and your affidavits, the Social Security Administration is admitting to the allegations.

If and when the SSA concocts a different response to our Release of Appointment and Rescission of Contract, please send a copy to the Author of Strategic Withdrawal for analysis.

---

On the following page, there is a copy of the Social Security form used to obtain a copy of your original application for a Social Security Number. File this as soon as possible. Some people are finding that the SSA has processed a false application during their 21<sup>st</sup> year (age of majority) which would make it appear that you had been of lawful age when applying for a number and signing your name. If there is any further evidence of fraudulent activity by the SSA, please forward the evidence to Gamaliel.

**00299.045 Form SSA-L996 Social Security  
Number Record Request for  
Extract or Photocopy**

(See R.M 00205.020 for an explanation of the use of the form.)

## Social Security Number Record Request for Extract or Photocopy

Mail to: Office of Central Records Operations  
Baltimore, Maryland 21235

Refer to: SPPE-1

**INSTRUCTIONS** - Print or type all data. Sign in ink. Allow 4 to 6 weeks for a reply.

I HEREBY REQUEST AN EXTRACT OR PHOTOCOPY OF MY APPLICATION(S) FOR A SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER. TO ESTABLISH MY IDENTITY AND TO VERIFY MY SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER, I AM FURNISHING MY FULL IDENTIFYING INFORMATION, AS FOLLOWS:

SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER (if known)	
FULL NAME NOW USED	
NAME SHOWN ON LAST SOCIAL SECURITY CARD <i>(if different from full name now used)</i>	
FULL NAME AT BIRTH	
DATE OF BIRTH (month, day, year)	SEX <input type="checkbox"/> MALE <input type="checkbox"/> FEMALE
PLACE OF BIRTH (city, county, and state or foreign country)	
FULL MAIDEN NAME OF MOTHER (whether living or dead)	
FULL NAME OF FATHER (whether living or dead)	

**PENALTY STATEMENT** (read before signing)

I am the person to whom this record pertains and I understand that to knowingly and willfully petition or acquire information from another person's social security record under false pretenses is a criminal offense subject to a \$5,000 fine.

SIGNATURE (do not print unless this is your usual signature)	DATE
STREET ADDRESS	
CITY, STATE, AND ZIP CODE	

NOTE: A printed signature or a signature by mark (X) must be witnessed below by two adults

(1)	(2)
SIGNATURE	SIGNATURE
STREET ADDRESS	STREET ADDRESS
CITY, STATE, AND ZIP CODE	CITY, STATE, AND ZIP CODE



THE COMMISSIONER OF SOCIAL SECURITY  
BALTIMORE, MARYLAND 21235

JUL 16 1936

Refer to:  
SEP71

Mr. [REDACTED]  
16 S [REDACTED]  
Kansas City, Kansas 64102

Dear Mr. [REDACTED]

This is in response to your letter of June 25.

We can understand your concern about getting a Social Security number before you can begin work. The Internal Revenue Code (26 U.S.C. 6109 (a)) and applicable regulations (26 CFR 301.6109-1 (d)) require an individual to get and use a Social Security number on tax documents and to furnish that number to any other person or institution (such as an employer or a bank) that is required to furnish to the Internal Revenue Service information about payments to the individual. There are penalties for failure to do so (see 26 U.S.C. 6676 (a) and 26 CFR 301.6676-1).

Section 205 (c) (2) (A) of the Social Security Act requires the Social Security Administration to establish and maintain records of wages and self-employment income for each individual whose work is covered under the program. Workers who do not wish to use their Social Security numbers for religious or other reasons should get in touch with the Internal Revenue Service office in their area to explain their position and receive advice on how to proceed.

We do not have the authority to require an employer to provide or deny employment or services to anyone who refuses to disclose his or her number. This is a matter between the individual and the employer.

We hope this information is helpful.

Sincerely,

*Dorcas R. Hardy*

Dorcas R. Hardy  
Commissioner of Social Security

**XV — Generic Notice and Demand**

Harvey Wallbanger  
Sui Juris, Claimant  
vs.  
\_\_\_\_\_  
respondents

**NOTICE AND DEMAND**

[ for driver's license, etc. ]

**Whereas**, the above-named respondent is in possession of a copy of my RELEASE OF APPOINTMENT from the obligations and restrictions placed upon my person through the Social Security Administration via the instrument known as the Social Security Card number #####; and,

**Whereas**, such RELEASE OF APPOINTMENT makes me no longer an instrumentality of the United States or a person presumed as being under the jurisdiction of the United States as contemplated in the so-called fourteenth article amended onto the Constitution for the united States; and,

**WHEREAS**, I am now free of legal disability;

**THEREFORE**, as public servants, you must, by oath, uphold the Supreme Law of the Land, so please either honor your trust and govern yourselves accordingly, or resign from office; and,

**THEREFORE**, the above-named respondent must not use the voided and rescinded Social Security Number for identifying me in any way; and,

**THEREFORE**, the above-named respondent must not relate with my person, papers, or property in any other manner than as prescribed under American Common Law; and,

**THEREFORE**, all action taken against Harvey Wallbanger that is outside of the common law constitutes violation of the God given rights and immunities of Harvey Wallbanger; and,

**THEREFORE**, when agents of the above-named respondent, commit actions which violate my rights as recognized in the Constitution for the united States, the agents of above-named respondent are put on NOTICE that such violations constitute a waiver of all defenses, including but not limited by, affirmative defense, legal defense, meritorious defense, partial defense, peremptory defense, personal defense, real defense, and/or equitable defense. NOTICE to agent is NOTICE to principal. NOTICE to principal is NOTICE to agents.

Before the Almighty God and under His statutes, I declare that the foregoing is the truth according to the best of my knowledge on this (date) day of (month) in the year of our Lord (year).

\_\_\_\_\_  
Harvey Wallbanger

**ATTESTATION**

Harvey Wallbanger, the undersigned, who is personally known by me or upon properly identification, did appear before me this day and sign the within instrument in my presence and for the purposes therein stated.

Signed this day, \_\_\_\_\_, at \_\_\_\_\_.

My commission expires on: \_\_\_\_\_.

\_\_\_\_\_  
**Notary Public**

**XVI — Certificate of Posting  
CERTIFICATE OF POSTING**

This certifies that the undersigned observed the following described documents being placed in an envelope addressed for:

\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

and identified by Identification Number # \_\_\_\_\_ with the correct posting locations for sender and receiver.

This envelope is entered into the delivery system of \_\_\_\_\_, with all common law rights reserved, and is deemed as delivered upon deposit with this delivery service.

Item #	Description
_____	_____
_____	_____
_____	_____
_____	_____
_____	_____
_____	_____
_____	_____

**MAILING CERTIFIED BY:**

\_\_\_\_\_ **DATE:** \_\_\_\_\_

## XVII — Checklist

Send To	A of C	Rel	Notice		Rev Sig		Rev Auto		Cert / Post	other
SSA	C	C	C		O				C	SS# card
IRS – National	C	C	C						C	
IRS – Region	C	C	C						C	
IRS – District	C	C	C						C	
<b>FEDERAL AGENCIES</b>										
Atty General	C	C	C						C	
Sec. of State	C	C	C						C	
<b>STATE AGENCIES</b>										
Sec. of State	C	C	C				C		C	
Atty General	C	C	C				C		C	
DMV	C	C	C				C		C-	Auto & Dr. Lic.
Police	C	C	C				C		C	
<b>COUNTY AGENCIES</b>										
Commissioners	C	C	C				C		C	
Sheriff	C	C	C				C		C	
Dist Atty	C	C	C				C		C	
<b>CITY AGENCIES</b>										
City Cops	C	C	C				C		C	
City Atty	C	C	C				C		C	
Voter Reg Card	C	C	C				C		C	Return the card
<b>BANKS</b>										
Bank #1	C	C	C		C				C	
Bank #2	C	C	C		C				C	
Bank #3	C	C	C		C				C	
Bank #4	C	C	C		C				C	
Bank #5	C	C	C		C				C	
Bank #6	C	C	C		C				C	

In the above chart "A of O" means Affidavit of Occupancy; "Rel" means Release of Appointment; "Notice" means Notice and Demand; "Rev Sig" means Revocation of Signature; "Rev Auto" means Revocation of Trust on Automobiles; "Cert Post" means Certificate of Posting.  
 Also: O = optional; X = Xerox; C = Certified Copy.

## XVIII — Free or Slave?

### DEMONIC GOVERNMENT

Created by men  
Ruled by men  
Lawmakers (legislators) = men  
Law books: USC, CFR, RCW, ORS, UCC, etc.  
Number of laws: millions and always growing

Law Enforcement: arbitrary and capricious  
Chastisement: equals punishment  
Punishment: arbitrary and capricious  
Courts: Roman Civil Law or Martial Law  
Man's status: servant of the banks, slave  
Money: Paper script = unjust balance  
Man's labor: owned by International Monetary Fund

Earnings: owned by our master, the corporations  
Real estate: Owned by government  
Travel: licensed by government  
Man's rights: NONE, he needs permission and license from the government  
Crimes: statutory, some are victimless  
Identity: Social Security Number  
Protected by: no one  
Wars: Started by politicians, fought by slaves  
Source of benefits: government

### OBEDIENT SLAVE

conform to known expectations  
votes in elections  
serves in armed forces  
looks to government for benefits  
fears the government  
identified by number  
may oppose government verbally,  
but never actively

### GOD'S GOVERNMENT

Created by God  
Ruled by God  
Laws given by God  
Law Book: Bible  
Number of laws: small number and they never change  
Law enforcement: justice tempered with mercy  
Chastisement: educational corrective procedure  
Punishment: just and eternal  
Courts: Common Law  
Man's status: Sovereigns under God  
Money: Gold and Silver  
Man's labor: owned by himself, a  
*gift from God*  
Earnings: our own, by exchange of our labor  
Real estate: Owned by Sovereigns  
Travel: free to travel  
Man's rights: limited only by God's Law and the rights of others  
Crimes: must be damaged party, mala en se  
Identity: name  
Protected by: God  
Wars: Started by foreigners, fought by God  
Source of benefits: God

### DISOBEDIENT SLAVE

\*disavows contractual obligations  
may or may not vote  
may or may not serve in armed forces  
\***still looks to government for benefits**  
fears the government  
identified by number  
\*opposes government with action

## XIX — Definitions

WORDS TO LOOK UP IN BLACK'S LAW DICTIONARY *and other sources*

affidavit	arrest	allocation	attempt
include	exclude	perjury	felony
United States	tax (taxpayer)	license	capacity
Tribute (money)	pay, payor, payee	fair hearing	fair trial
Promissory note	contract	subject	citizen
issue	issue of fact	issue of law	quasi
good faith	doctrine	resident	signature
presumption	fraud	non assumpsit	lien
sui juris	supremacy clause	shakedown	extortion
nature of charges	Miranda warning	bill of attainder	copyright
et seq	latches	jurisdiction	Judicial Power
Sovereign	enfranchised	unenfranchised	levy
mala en se	mala prohibida	best evidence rule	free hold
allodial	posse comitatus	stare decisis	extortion
<b>or</b>	<b>of</b>	drive	driver
habeas corpus	assert	express abrogation	
legal disability		Family Automobile Doctrine (4th & 5 <sup>th</sup> ed.)	
enumerated powers		Family Car Doctrine (4 <sup>th</sup> edition)	
legal capacity		quo warrento	
breach of oath		assertion of rights	
discharge (a debt)		Uniform Commercial Code	
corruption of blood		color of law	
Escobedo Rule		contribution	
"saving to suitors clause"		partus sequitur ventrem	
Marriage License		Miscegenation	

Some of these words have long or precise definitions and you may wish to copy the pages, 3-hole punch them and put them behind a copy of this page in a 3-ring binder. A good word to start with is "*fraud*" because most of your actions against bureaucrats are actions for fraud. As you look up the USC's and court cases cited in some of Black's definitions, you will add them to your book

---

### "PERSON" or "SOVEREIGN"?

Do you feel threatened by a statute that says that a "*person*" can be prosecuted for a certain infraction? These three court cases will give you confidence.

Don't just cite them, **READ THEM!!!**

"Since in common usage the term 'person' *does not include the SOVEREIGN*, statutes employing that term are ordinarily construed to exclude it" [*emphasis added*]

U.S. v Cooper 312 US 600

U.S. v General Motors 2 FRD 528

U.S. v United Mine Workers 330 US 258

**XX — Directed Research**  
**USC'S, CFR'S, AND UCC'S TO CONSULT / COPY**  
**ANNOTATED**

**Uniform Commercial Code (UCC)                      use *Anderson's* UCC**

- 1-103 - contracts, note #6 says what to do if contract is signed under protest
- 1-207 - reservation of rights, goes with UCC 1-103, # note 6
- 3-104 - negotiable instruments law is found in this area. 3-104(2)(a-c) are public law (d) is private law

**Title 4 – Flag and Seal**

- 4 USC § 1    copy the description of how to hang flag
- 4 USC §§ 71 & 72    Seat of Government, says EXPLICITLY that the federal government has no jurisdiction outside of Washington, DC
- 4 USC § 105 through 113    **Buck Act**, describes how a federal agency may draw arbitrary lines within the geographic boundaries of a Sovereign state and exercise jurisdiction over that area. This is contrary to 4 USC § 72.

**Title 5 – Administrative Code**

- 5 USC 552 & 552a – FOIA/Privacy act
- 5 USC 556
- Other parts of 5 USC have procedure for hearings, etc., check the index

**Title 26 USC, Internal Revenue Code**

- 3121(e) Definitions of State, United States, and citizen
- 3306(j) Definitions of State, United States, American employer, etc.
- 4612(a)(4)(A) Definitions – United States “*MEANS*” (did not use the word “*includes*”) the 50 states, etc. [see: § 7701 *in re*: “otherwise expressed” ]
- 4662(a)(2) Definitions – see note on 4612, above
- 6001 – “liable for any tax” does not support the presumption that all humans are taxpayers. Makes it clear that there is *something specific* which makes a person liable.
- 6323(f) liens for taxes must be filed with the COUNTY. If the true power is in the federal government, why do they have to file the lien with the county? SEE: POSSE COMITATUS
- 6331(a) in pertinent part, “Levy may be made upon the accrued salary or wages of an ... *instrumentality of the United States* ... by serving notice of levy on the employer ...”. “*Instrumentality*” means “*SSN holder*”.
- 6065 - no assessment is valid unless signed under penalty of perjury, even *their* assessments
- 7421 – the anti-injunction act. You can't sue to restrain assessment OR collection
- 7701 – definitions – look closely at the “otherwise expressed” phrase  
State – Alaska and Hawaii were included until they became *real* States. If “states” means all 50 states, why are “the 50 states” otherwise expressed in the chapter on environmental taxes? Also check out “(14) taxpayer”
- 7701(a)(29) internal revenue code of 1939 was originally titled “Public Employee Tax Act of 1939” They amended the title “ex post facto”

7701(c) definition of “includes.” Doublespeak. 4 USC § 72 defines U.S. and that is the “things otherwise within the meaning of the term defined”.

7701(a)(26) a trade or business *includes* the performance of the functions of a public office

7805 – Internal Revenue CODE is enforced through regulations promulgated by the U. S. Governor for the International Monetary Fund.

7806 – Internal Revenue Code will have *no legal effect*

7809 – money collected under LAW is paid daily into the *U. S. Treasury*.

There is no treasury, folks! There is a treasurer but he runs a DESK, not a treasury. Even the Secretary of the Treasury office was abolished in 1945 and replaced with the U. S. Governor of the International Monetary Fund. The *NAME* “Secretary of the Treasury” is maintained for historical (deceptive) reasons. Since all money collected by the IRS is paid to the Federal Reserve (on U. S. Obligations) this is evidence the money is EITHER being handled illegally OR, it is not collected under LAW.

(Answer? It is collected under *contract*.)

#### Codes of Federal Regulations – (CFR’s)

Check the last volume for a table of cross references from USC to CFR showing where a particular section of a U. S. CODE is promulgated into a REGULATION. It is called a “Parallel Table of Authorities and Rules.” Xerox the pages of the “Parallel Table of Authorities and Rules” that have to do with the Internal Revenue Code (Title 26 USC). Use a YELLOW highlighter to mark X-refs to the sections of 26 USC that are listed above, then look up the related CFRs and copy *them*. It is a great education.

#### FEDERAL RULES OF CIVIL PROCEDURE

**Rule 4(d)** – I thought I knew what a person was! Was I ever surprised when I saw this.

**Rule 12(h)(2)** – you move for dismissal of a criminal tax case for; 1- failure to state a claim for which relief may be granted [proof of intent is indispensable element of criminal charge and lacking a SSN contract I have a right to rely on my Constitutional protection against a

“capitation” tax] and 2- Failure to join a party indispensable under Rule 19, i.e., Rule 17(a) requires the IMF and/or Federal Reserve to be a party as they are the true party in interest

**Rule 17(a)** – Real Party in interest – when the U. S. is involved, the real party in interest is the IMF. Since the government reorganization act of 1980 (when Gingrich was a freshman) all money collected by the U S from ANY SOURCE goes directly to the IMF. Since the fines and taxes are merely being collected BY the government, not FOR the government, the REAL party in interest is the IMF. You will also notice in this section that the U. S. may bring an action for the benefit of another party IN THE NAME OF THE UNITED STATES! This is why you need to DEMAND TO KNOW THE NATURE OF THE PARTY.

**Rule 17** – they won’t tell you you’re under legal disability via your SSN, the court will just assume guardian ad litem over you.

#### SUPPLEMENTAL ADMIRALTY RULES

**Rule E(4)(f)** for Sovereigns to get their money back after attachment under civil forfeiture or administrative assessment. *Sovereigns only*, no instrumentalities need apply. Sorry!

**Rule E(8)** allows restricted appearance. You grant jurisdiction to the court for ONLY the purposes YOU stipulate, they don’t have authority to throw you in jail or fine you unless YOU SAY THEY CAN. [*for Sovereigns only*]

## RULES of EVIDENCE

**Rule 301** *Presumptions*- read about the “*bursting bubble theory*”, *negligence*, and the need to provide a “*rational connection*” between the bureaucrat’s KNOWLEDGE that he is causing a deprivation of rights and his actions. You provide the “*rational connection*” with your constructive notice. Read the case cites for this RULE.

**Rule 302** See how much power there is in State law? There goes the attorney’s claim that, “In a general way, federal law takes precedence over state law.”

## 28 USC – JUDICIARY located in your “*Federal Rules of Civil Procedure*”

**28 USC 451** discusses the *District Court of the US* and *US District Court*, The only Federal common-law court is the DCUS in Washington, DC. This is the only court in which Sovereigns may sue and be sued.

**28 USC 1333** – Check “*saving to suitors*” in Black’s. Common law remedy is only available to Sovereigns, since the SSN contract would supersede your constitutional right to a common law remedy.

**28 USC 1349** – U. S. District Court has no jurisdiction in IRS cases since the true party in interest is the IMF and the U. S. owns less than 20% of the stock.

**28 USC 1356** – Doesn’t apply to SSN holders. Says, “*seized under LAW*”

**28 USC 1357** – can’t recover damages for collection activities under contract

**28 USC 1359** – *Collusive joining* of a party **equals loss of jurisdiction**

**28 USC 1361** – writ of mandamus has been eliminated, FOIA allows action “in the nature of a mandamus”. *Question*: How can our right to petition for redress of grievance exist, yet we have no access to the ancient “Writ of Mandamus”?

**28 USC 1746** – **PAY ATTENTION!** - IF YOUR AFFIRMATION UNDER PENALTY OF PERJURY IS WORDED WRONG, YOU PROVIDE PRESUMPTIVE EVIDENCE OF WASHINGTON, DC CITIZENSHIP!

**28 USC 1652** – laws of states have same weight as “*stare decisis*” in federal court, **only** the U. S. Constitution is superior to a State’s Constitution and laws

**28 USC 1655** – use this to remove cloud on title to land

**28 USC 2461** – Recovery of property is always under Admiralty Rules

**28 USC 2463** – law, not contract – sorry!

**28 USC 2502** – as a Sovereign State Citizen, you are in an alien jurisdiction to Wash, DC

**28 USC 2674** – U. S. is liable to lawsuit like a private individual (SEE: also, sect. 3002(15)(C))

**28 USC 3002(10)** – person - in court you should be able to “*discover*” or demand information about the nature of the person bringing charges

**28 USC 3002(15)** – United States. Remember back when you thought the United States was made up of 50 states? **YOU** are the United States if you are an instrumentality (have a Social Security Card) How can you sue the IRS?

**28 USC 3101-3105** – pre-judgment remedies (tax), notice and hearing, affidavit – *mandatory government procedure*

**28 USC 3201-3206** – post judgment remedies, 3201 is cross-reference to 26 USC 6323(f) – **the anti-injunction act**

## XXI — Additional Reading, *ANNOTATED*

### Secrets of the Federal Reserve

by Eustice Mullens

You can buy this one *from BOHICA, CPA or Anderson's Ark*

### How Anyone Can Stop Paying Income Taxes

by Irwin Schiff © 1982

Following Irwin Schiff's advice can land you in jail, just like it did for him, but he *does* teach you how to study 26 USC

### POSSE COMITATUS

\$20.00, worth *twice* that.

ABS

C/O 3434 North Pacific Highway

*From BOHICA*

Medford, Oregon 97501

### THEY WERE WHITE, AND THEY WERE SLAVES

by: Michael A. Hoffman, II

email: [hoffman@hoffman-info.com](mailto:hoffman@hoffman-info.com)

Independent History Research

web: <http://www.hoffman-info.com/>

C/O P. O. Box 849

Coeur d'Alene, Idaho 83816

another source is *Anderson's Ark*

This is what the New World Order wants back. This may be what George Bush meant by "traditional values." From the relative length of transport time involved, and the relative cost of procurement, it appears there were *many* more WHITE slaves brought to America than there were black slaves. White slaves were also treated much worse, because they were so much cheaper to replace. Ask an Irishman about it. Read "Oliver Twist." Those who would profit from dividing the Citizens of our nation seem to want us to ignore this subject. If you are confused *at all* about why *white* men fought so hard for a Nation that would protect Africans, Indians, and Asians, read this book. If you visit Mr. Hoffman's Website, you will find an interesting, on-going discussion about "hate-crimes" and *anti-anti-Semitism*.

### Mere Christianity

By: C. S. Lewis

From: Any Christian Bookstore

Helps "Church Educated" Christians begin to see Bible teachings more clearly, without first being passed through their "Doctrinal Filter."

## XXII — Addresses for Information ANNOTATED

### **FAX-On-Demand (801)741-9175**

#### **The latest and best information on Offshore Trusts/S.A.s/secure offshore banking**

If you will be receiving via Computer, have the computer ready for manual pick-up of the phone. Dial the number from a FAX/Phone or from a FAX/Modem equipped computer. Follow the voice prompts. When asked for the number of the document that you wish to retrieve, enter the two-digit number of that document. You will be informed that the document you selected is added to the list. After you have added all of the documents to the list that you wish to receive, press the # symbol. Then press < **start** > on a fax machine or click < **answer** > on the computer.

**Church of the Body of Christ**  
and **Anderson's Ark**  
C/O N 250 Fairway Dr. E.  
Hoodsport, Washington 98548

voice: (360)877-0244  
FAX: (360)877-5646  
email: [sma@nwnexus.com](mailto:sma@nwnexus.com)

lecturers for group meetings, specializing in God's plan for Sovereignty, tools for change

**Free Enterprise Society**  
300 West Shaw Avenue, Suite #205  
Clovis, California 93612

1(209)294-0665

Books, literature, and expert legal assistance

**Militia of Montana** 1(406)847-2735  
Box 1486  
Noxon, Montana 59853

**MOM is NOT a Militia**, but it **IS** one of the better book, literature, video, and tape sources you'll find anywhere. They have about 500 tapes and books, plus militia and camping supplies.

**World Services Authority**  
1012 14<sup>th</sup> St. N. W., Suite #1106  
Washington, D. C. 20005

1(202)638-2662  
<http://www.worldservices.org>

Passports and other services. Done under U. N. rules, so be careful what you buy.

**BOHICA Concepts**  
P. O. Box 546-C,  
Randle, Washington 98377

no phone or email, send \$2 for catalog

Most of the books I have discussed are handled by this excellent bookstore. BOHICA is a frequent exhibitor at gun shows and preparedness expos. They have the **Geneva Bible** and many other "politically incorrect" books.

**Carl Klang**  
C/O P. O. Box 217  
Colton, Oregon 97017

web: <http://www.klang.com>  
email: [carl@klang.com](mailto:carl@klang.com)  
Phone: 503-824-3371

Audio tapes—music and words that are relative to the subject matter of **STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL**. Carl manages to totally understand the world situation yet he sings his songs in such a way that you can laugh and have a good time, without losing sight of what is important. He is my favorite singer of songs about issues like taxes, speeding tickets, Waco, Weaver, IRS, Banksters, FEMA, and the works. I am going to buy every tape he puts out. He is *kinda country, sorta folk, quite religious and very relevant*. You will find yourself singing these songs while you are driving and working. **Joel Barlow**, a Revolutionary War Army Chaplain, said, "*One good song is worth a dozen addresses or proclamations.*" The NWO *hates it* when we can focus our energy with this kind of music. He has 6 tapes, \$12.00 each. If you send him \$50.00 then he will send you all six tapes. Life is tough for non-druggie musicians. All businessmen who care about this cause should carry Carl's tapes in their stores or shops.

**CPA BOOKS** 503-668-4941  
33838 SE Kelso Rd. #2  
C/O P.O. Box 596  
Boring, Oregon 97009

Another excellent book store. If **BOHICA** doesn't have it, **CPA** does. **CPA** regularly stocks the **Geneva Bible**, **Strong's Concordance**, **Rules of Civil Procedure**, and the **IRS Code**.

**For information/assistance in forming a Corporation Sole or Ecclesiastical Trust**

**Jack & Louise Cox**  
C/O 2400 N.W. 80th St., Ste 215  
Seattle, Washington 98117

Phone: 206-706-9032 FAX: 706-9353  
email: [Makiki2@aol.com](mailto:Makiki2@aol.com)

-or-

**Gamaliel Ministries**  
C/O Box 1160

e-mail: [strategy@infotec.net.mx](mailto:strategy@infotec.net.mx)

Why, Arizona 85321

Strategic Withdrawal Workshops: (254)725-4501

**Information on dealing with fraudulent bank loans and credit cards.**

Darryl Reed  
C/O General Delivery  
Carson City Post Office  
Carson City, Nevada

no zip code, spell out names in upper/lower case

Ask for book on dealing with bank loans. \$100.00 postage postal Money Orders only

The book is over 300 pages. It is a collection of works by various authors and also covers such things as dealing with traffic tickets after-the-fact, and other sovereignty issues. The book is heavily court-oriented.

## Exposing Bank Fraud

Thomas D. Schauf  
C/O 1322-1 Kingsbury Dr.  
Hanover Park, Illinois Republic, 60103

708-289-5634

Send \$300.00 for the book "Exposing Bank Fraud"

Both of these books bank fraud go into great detail and make the zeroing of bank loans a rather simple task. The real trick is to stay out of court, if at all possible. My own way of dealing with this would be to plaster public notices all over town and in all business shop windows. The notice would be a copy of a recorded document showing fraud and a "Notice and Demand" to pay up or have bankruptcy initiated against them. You might not go to court, but I'll bet they will want to talk you into not posting any more notices!

---

### Strategic Withdrawal, in a nutshell.

"Those people not governed by God will be governed by tyrants" – William Penn

"We have this day restored the Sovereign, to whom alone men ought to be obedient. He reigns in Heaven, and from the rising to the setting sun, may His Kingdom come!"

- Samuel Adams, August 1, 1776

"We have staked the whole future of American civilization, not upon the power of government, far from in. We have staked the future ... upon the capacity of each and all of us to govern ourselves, to sustain, according to the ten commandments of God." - James Madison, 1778

"It is quite clear then that there is a citizenship of the United States and a citizenship of a State, which are distinct from each other and which depend upon different characteristics or circumstances in the individual." **Slaughter House Cases, 83 US 395, 407.**

### Author's Note

At this point, it should be quite clear to the reader that our nation's leadership changed radically between the Declaration of Independence and the "ratification" of the Constitution for the united States. The Declaration of Independence removed the curse placed upon mankind in First Samuel 8:18. Further evidence that this was the publicly accepted intent and purpose of the Declaration of Independence is the 1778 quote from James Madison (above).

We have individually re-created our own slavery by entering into contracts with a government founded upon man's law. We may individually remove the slavery (curse) by reverting to the natural condition of one who is free-born into America. Because there is only one true Law, and one Law Giver, the government is compelled by its own statutes into accepting our expatriation into our natural state and condition of Liberty.

Extensive changes in our lifestyles may be required in order to accomplish this. Believe me, they are worth the effort.

## XXIII — WEBSITES AND E-MAIL ADDRESSES FOR HISTORICAL and LEGAL RESEARCH

### STATE CITIZEN SERVICE CENTER

<http://www.state-citizen.org/>

This is Richard Macdonald's "State Citizen" information center. There are many files in this database that are vital for full understanding of the World Banker's plans. There is a directory of files by George Mercier. George was a master at disclosing hidden contracts. Visit this site and fill your Zip drive with George Mercier books, the documents on "British Colony," works of Lysander Spooner, and many other interesting and relevant subjects.

The file called "**Is America Still a British Colony**" contains the Treaty of Paris, the Treaty of Ghent, Cornwallis Capitulation at Yorktown, the Virginia Colony Charter, and an in-depth analysis of how these treaties have been interpreted under article six paragraph two of the constitution. There is also a listing of ratification dates for the "original" [actually, the only] thirteenth amendment to the constitution. The *Titles of Nobility Amendment* revoked the American Citizenship of all attorneys and judges who took the foreign titles of "Esquire" and "Your Honor." Two, different attorneys have told me that the supreme Court has ruled that the Declaration of Independence is an illegal document. One of the attorneys said that the ruling was in the year 1854. I have not been able to find this case. IF those attorneys were not just lying to me, then the supreme Court ruling would in itself be illegal through *conflict of interest* (making a ruling regarding their own authority to practice law) and *lack of capacity* (they had been without American Citizenship for about thirty five years).

I am giving Richard Macdonald's website a shameless advertisement, here, because it is one of the best laid out, least frills, and most informative places that you can go for knowledge of history and man's law. The files represent a lifetime of dedicated work. Use it!

### FOREST GLEN DURAND

<http://www.uhuh.com>

Mr. Forest G. Durand has an electronically reproduced copy of a Certified copy of the Thirteenth Amendment, as published by the State of Maine in 1825. There is more information on the thirteenth amendment on this website than on any other that I have visited.

### AMERICAN PATRIOT FRIENDS NETWORK

<http://www.esotericworldnews.com/apfncont.htm>

### KEN ADLER'S FILES

<http://www.loop.com/~kenadler/sov/files.htm>

Hundreds of files for the Sovereign. There are court cases and much more. Many of the files on Sovereignty are useful to the readers of Strategic Withdrawal, *now that you understand the basics*. Without the understanding of your relationship with the government through bankruptcy, many of these files would only bring more grief. Great website. *Thank you, Ken!*

## **THE PISSED OFF AMERICAN PAGE**

<http://dave.smith.net/poa/>

This is Dave Smith's famous website. Dave is a 100% normal American that began his website as an expression of disgust at some of the things that the government was doing. He felt that it was his *right and obligation* as an American to *correct the wrongs*. Dave had thought that the government was just a little off-base but the problems were still fixable. The more that Dave learned, the madder he got, until he read *Strategic Withdrawal*. Now Dave knows that there is a remedy, a personal, *peaceful* remedy, even though the problems with the government are so deep seated that they are *not* fixable. Contains a door to the American Patriot Chat Room (APCR).

## **CONSTITUTION & APPLICATION, LANDMARK COURT CASES & MORE**

<http://www.nidlink.com/~bobhard/constit1.html>

## **OKLAHOMA CITY BOMBING INFO CENTER**

<http://www.future.net/~thetruth/okc.html>

## **QUOTATIONS FROM FOUNDING FATHERS & OTHER NOTABLE PERSONALITIES**

<http://www.io.com/~velte/quotes.htm>

## **SECRETS OF THE FEDERAL RESERVE (BOOK BY EUSTACE MULLINS)**

<ftp://ftp.irdg.com/pc93/secfed/secfed.zip>

## **SERVING THE HOME SCHOOL COMMUNITY - FOR & BY HOME SCHOOLERS**

<http://www.hslda.org>

## **SUPREME LAW LIBRARY**

<http://supremelaw.com>

## **MOUNT CARMEL CENTER**

<http://www.flash.net/~wyla/>

Copies of the alleged Warrant that was not served on the Branch Davidians. Virtually complete trial transcripts, etc. Also, a door to the APCR.

## **FEDERAL AND STATE LAWS AND COURT DECISIONS**

<http://www.law.house.gov/>

This site has the full text of the USC's and CFR's, but only has the supreme Court cases after 1937. Is it a coincidence that Erie Rail Road v. Tompkins was decided that year? Decide this for yourself.

## **CARL KLANG MUSIC MINISTRIES**

<http://www.klang.com>

If you have "Real Audio," you can listen to Carl's music! (Also, a door to APCR)

## **TAX CODE**

<http://www.fourmilab.ch/ustax/ustax.html>

A specialist website. Title 26 United States Code is also available in other places.

## **VISA INFORMATION**

[http://www.travel.state.gov/visa\\_services.html](http://www.travel.state.gov/visa_services.html)

Planning on taking a trip? Leaving a paper trail? Getting lost?

## **ZIP CODE LOOK UP & ADDRESS INFORMATION**

<http://www.usps.gov/ncsc>

## **BIO DIVERSITY MAPS**

<http://www.america-collins.com/biomaps.htm>

These maps show where the European Aristocracy wants us to live. The European Aristocracy has determined that the population of the earth must be reduced and moved into these pre-defined areas. In order to understand the jargon of people like "Lord" Albert Gore, this information is essential. All of the environmental terrorism of Greenpeace, the Sierra Club, and like environmental activists serves the agenda of the global elitists. I have some dear friends that are involved in Greenpeace activities. They are sincerely concerned about the world in which we live. They have focused upon the *result* of the greed of the European Aristocracy and not upon their guiding force, the Money Master, Baron Rothschild. To Rothschild, we are but boisterous and hungry playthings that eat too much food and take up too much energy. Most of us are dispensable and must be eliminated. This Website shows part of their plan for accomplishing their goal.

## **BORDER 21 (AKA: AGENDA 21)**

<http://www.libertymatters.org/border21.htm>

This is the area near America's Southern Border that has been deeded over to the United Nations. If you doubt that congress knows exactly what they are doing, read these files. Mike Reagan has told us about it on his talk show. Why doesn't your "elected representative"? Who does he really represent?

## **FEDERAL RESERVE ORIGIN, HISTORY, PURPOSES**

<ftp://ftp.irdg.com/pc93/secfed/secfed1.gif>

## **PATRIOT KNOWLEDGE BASE**

<http://www.micro.com/~pkb/index.html>

## **VIRTUAL LAW LIBRARY**

<http://www.law.indiana.edu/law/lawindex.html>

---

**"It's too late to fix the system and too early to shoot the bastards." - Clair Wolfe**

## XXIV — Scriptural Support

### GENESIS

2:1,3 Sabbath keeping  
23:16 value of silver  
\*47<sup>th</sup> Chapter - into bondage

### EXODUS

\*6:6 God frees us  
\*12:35-36 “borrowed” gold, silver, and jewelry of Egyptians  
20:3 No other gods  
20:8 Keep the Sabbath  
\*23:32 make no covenant with the government  
31:13-17 Keep the Sabbath  
32:1-8 worship of golden calf  
34:17 no molten gods

### LEVITICUS

\*18:3-5 Don't obey their law, obey God's law  
19:36 use just balances

### NUMBERS

7:13 shekels of silver  
25:34 slay those bond to Baal of Peor

### DEUTERONOMY

8:19 serve other gods – perish  
\*12:32 don't add or take away from God's law  
\*15:6 lend, not borrow  
\*15:16-17 refusing to accept freedom  
20:4 God fights our battles  
\*23:20 Charging Usury is a blessing!! Not condemned  
26:10 law of first fruits

### JOSHUA

7:21 shekels of silver

### I SAMUEL

\*chapter 8 people forsook God's government

### II SAMUEL

\*24:10 god's people not numbered  
24:24 Shekels of silver

**JOB:** 19:25-27 Job knew what was up!

### PSALMS

Chap 37 – the righteous are not forsaken  
Chap 91 – Ultimate Insurance Policy

### PROVERBS

3:5 not our own understanding  
use “plain wording of the statute”  
11:1 deceptive balance = abomination  
16:11 all weights of bag = God's work

### PROVERBS

20:10 divers measures = abomination  
\*22:7 borrower is slave to the lender

### ECCLESIASTES

\*3:13 our labor is a gift from God

### ISAIAH

1:16-17 cease wickedness – do well  
\*5:20 woe to those who call evil good and good evil  
9:6,7 Lord's peace and government  
10:1,2 unjust decrees rob God's people of justice  
\*33:22 For the LORD is our Judge, the LORD is our lawgiver, the LORD is our king; he will save us.

### DANIEL

Chap 3 worship of golden image  
\*3:16-18 Obey God, not man  
\*Chap 6, especially 10, obey God, not government laws

### HOSEA

\*4:6 people destroyed for lack of knowledge

### ZECHARIAH

11:12 30 pieces of silver

### MATTHEW

3:10 tree with bad fruit hewn down  
5:34 no swearing  
\*6:24 can't serve two masters  
10:34 brings not peace, but a sword  
12:25,26,30 Govt. puts God out of public schools so as not to divide itself, we must be separated  
\*17:24-27 “Jerusalem Story” about taxes, Sovereigns are free  
Chap 19 how we treat other slaves & Sovereigns  
\*22:15-22 give Caesar what is already his  
22:34-40 don't ever trust a lawyer! This is referred to as the “pivotal passage of scripture”.  
22:41-46 interesting question about identity of Messiah  
24:11 MANY false prophets, how many “govt. churches” are there? Many?  
28:20 keep the commandments

### MARK

10:28-31 receive an hundredfold now, in this time  
3:27 First disarm, then bind, then plunder

### LUKE

3:14 directions for soldiers (policemen)  
11:46-52 Is there any such thing as a Christian Lawyer? I don't see how.  
\*13:3 repent or perish  
\*23:2 forbidding to give tribute to Caesar

## JOHN

15:10 keep my commandments

**\*Chap 17 prescription for pessimism**

## ACTS

**\*5:25-30 Obey God, not man**

## ROMANS

6:16 Your choice of who you follow (govt. or God) determines your eternal destiny.

8:14,15 freedom from fear in following God

**\*Chap 13 – refers to *spiritual* authority or else the references to obeying God rather than man are all meaningless**

## I CORINTHIANS

6:16 definition of marriage; see also: Genesis 2:24

6:20 Our freedom DID cost SOMEBODY

**\*7:21-23 we are not to become slaves of men**

10:21 not possible to sit on the fence

## GALATIANS

**\*5:1 once you are free, don't go back into bondage**

5:16,17 live a clean life, it is worth the effort

5:19-21 for a real surprise, look up each word in Strong's!

5:22,23 result of effort in 5:16,17 breaking no law

## EPHESIANS

**\*4:28 no stealing, work with hands**

5:11 no fellowship with darkness

6:11,12 our protection and our adversary

## PHILIPPIANS

**\*3:20 Citizenship is in the heavens (Strong's)**

4:8 how to train our minds

## COLOSSIANS

2:8 avoid the deception of men's philosophies

## I TIMOTHY

**\*5:8 provide for your family**

6:10 LOVE of money is root of all evil

Sovereigns USE money and LOVE God.

Bankers LOVE money and USE God.

## II TIMOTHY

**\*1:7 God gives us these powers *after* we obey him**

3:1-9 perilous times are already here! Must read about Jannes and Jambres to understand this.

## HEBREWS

4:8-11 Sabbath keeping

**\*Chap 10, especially verse 26 – If we understand the contract we voided (SSN) to become Sovereign, then obtaining a benefit in the future would be “knowingly”. Just like the slave with the awl and ear punch, we are then a slave for life with no recourse. We KNEW the result of asking for the benefit.**

## JAMES

**\*1:15 Lust + Sin = Death LSD This is if your *desire* is so uncontrolled you are willing to become a slave to get it (go into debt), you die.**

1:22 You know what's right, now DO IT!

2:1-9 the rich are the oppressors, don't judge by appearances

3:19 the devils believe, and tremble!

4:4 Friend of world = enemy of God

5:1-11 especially verse 4 Watch out Bankers, justice is coming!

## I PETER

**\*2:13,14 submit to man's rules that protect us. Some of them actually do.**

## I JOHN

2:15 do not love the world

## REVELATIONS

13:13-18 mark of the beast = chi xi stigma  
(imbedded identifier of property)

**\*18:4 Come out of her, my people, don't take benefits, don't be plagued**

**\*18:6 We return unto her double. God didn't say HE would do it.**

20:4 Here's where we may meet Job.

## CONSTITUTION FOR THE UNITED STATES ARTICLE I, SECTION 10

Gold and silver coin are the only lawful money.

“Paper money” is a false set of weights and measures. [Proverbs 11:1]

## XXV — SAMPLE CONTRACT

# INDEPENDENT CONTRACTOR AGREEMENT

This Agreement is made effective as of this date, \_\_\_\_\_, by and between Better Boat Builders, 4816 South Bay Road, Yaquina Bay, Oregon and Hubert McIntosh who receives post in care of P.O. Box 47, Elk City, Oregon.

In this Agreement, the party who is contracting for receiving services shall be called "Better Boat Builders" and the party who will be providing the services shall be referred to as "Contractor."

Contractor has a background including significant training and assets in building and repairing small boats up to 50 feet long and will provide services for Better Boat Builders based upon this background.

Better Boat Builders desires the services provided by the Contractor.

**THEREFORE**, the parties agree as follows:

1. **DESCRIPTION OF SERVICES:** Beginning on   (date)  , Contractor will provide the following services (collectively called, "Services"): basic building and repair of wooden and fiberglass boats, building and repair of boat hydraulic, pneumatic, electrical, and plumbing systems as per any attached job order. [note: this could be as simple as, "Janitorial services and basic building maintenance" depending on the services being provided.]
2. **PERFORMANCE OF SERVICES:** The manner in which the Services are being performed and the specific hours being worked by Contractor are determined by Contractor. Better Boat Builders will rely on Contractor for working as many hours as may be reasonably necessary for fulfilling Contractor's obligations under this agreement.
3. **COMMISSION PAYMENTS:** Better Boat Builders will make commission payments unto Contractor based on \_\_\_\_\_ % of each contract unit. [note: a *contract unit* could be virtually everything, including hours].
4. **NEW PROJECT APPROVAL:** Contractor and Better Boat Builders recognize that Contractor's Services will include working on various projects for Better Boat Builders. Contractor shall obtain the approval of Better Boat Builders before commencement of a new project and a new contract shall be negotiated for each job.
5. **TERM AND TERMINATION:** This Agreement terminates automatically upon completion by Contractor of the services required by this Agreement.
6. **RELATIONSHIP OF PARTIES:** It is understood by the parties that Contractor is an independent contractor respecting Better Boat Builders and not an employee of Better Boat Builders. Better Boat Builders does not provide fringe benefits such as health insurance benefits, paid vacation, or any other employee benefit for the Contractor. It is further understood by both parties that this agreement is non-exclusive, to wit; that Better Boat Builders may contract with other parties for performance of essentially the same services and that the Contractor may contract with other parties for performance of the same or similar services.
7. **DISCLOSURE:** Disclosure is required by Contractor of any outside activities or interests including, but not limited by ownership or participation in the development of prior inventions that conflict or may conflict with the best interests of Better Boat Builders. Prompt disclosure is required under this paragraph if the activity or interest is related, directly or indirectly, with:
  - A. a product line of Better Boat Builders
  - B. a manufacturing process of Better Boat Builders
  - C. any activity that Contractor may be involved with on behalf of Better Boat Builders
8. **EMPLOYEES:** Contractor's employees, if any, who perform services for Better Boat Builders under this Agreement shall also be bound by this Agreement.
9. **INJURIES:** Contractor acknowledges Contractor's obligation for obtaining appropriate insurance coverage for the benefit of Contractor (and Contractor's employees, if any). Contractor waives any rights for recovery of Better Boat Builders for any injuries that Contractor (and/or Contractor's employees, if any) may sustain while performing services under this Agreement and that are the result of the negligence of Contractor or Contractor's employees.

10. **INDEMNIFICATION:** Contractor indemnifies and holds Better Boat Builders harmless of all claims, losses, expenses, fees (including attorney costs), and judgments asserted against Better Boat Builders that are the result of acts or omissions of Contractor, Contractor's employees, if any, and/or Contractor's agents.

11. **ASSIGNMENT:** Contractor's obligations under this Contract may not be assigned or transferred for use by any other person, firm, or corporation without prior written consent of Better Boat Builders and Contractor.

12. **INTELLECTUAL PROPERTY:** The following provisions shall apply respecting copyrightable works, ideas, discoveries, inventions, applications for patents, and patents (collectively called, "Intellectual Property"): Consultant's intellectual property: Contractor does not personally hold any interest in any Intellectual Property.

13. **CONFIDENTIALITY:** Contractor recognizes that Better Boat Builders has the following information: apparatus, business affairs, costs, customer lists, discounts, future plans inventions, machinery, prices, process information, products, technical information, trade secrets, and other proprietary information (collectively called, "Information") which are valuable, special, and unique assets of Better Boat Builders and need protection against improper disclosure. In consideration for the disclosure of Information, Contractor agrees that Contractor does not at any time nor in any manner, either directly or indirectly, have the right of using any confidential Information for Contractor's own benefit, or divulge, disclose, or communicate in any manner any Information for any third party without the prior written consent of Better Boat Builders. Contractor protects the Information and treats the information as strictly confidential. A violation of this provision is a material violation of this Agreement.

14. **UNAUTHORIZED DISCLOSURE OF INFORMATION:** If it appears that Contractor has disclosed (or has threatened disclosure of) Information in violation of this Agreement, Better Boat Builders is entitled for an injunction restraining Contractor's disclosure, in whole or in part, such Information, or providing services for any party for whom such Information has been disclosed or may be disclosed. This provision does not prohibit Better Boat Builders pursuit of other remedies including, but not limited by, a claim for losses and/or damages.

15. **CONFIDENTIALITY AFTER TERMINATION:** The confidentiality provisions of this Agreement shall remain in full force and effect after the Termination of this Agreement.

16. **RETURN OF RECORDS:** Upon Termination of this Agreement, Contractor returns into custody of Better Boat Builders all records, notes, data, memoranda, models, and equipment of any nature that are in Contractor's possession or under Contractor's control and that are the property of Better Boat Builders or relate with the business of Better Boat Builders.

17. **NOTICES:** All notices required or permitted under this Agreement are in writing and shall be deemed delivered when delivered in person or deposited in the United States Mail, postage prepaid, addressed to their principle place of business, as follows:

IF to Better Boat Builders:  
Better Boat Builders  
Sterling B. Chandler, Proprietor  
C/O 4816 South Bay Road  
Yaquina Bay, Oregon [97366]

IF to Contractor:  
Hubert McIntosh  
C/O P.O. Box 47  
Elk City, Oregon [97371]

Such address may be changed periodically by either party by providing written notice for the other party in the manner set forth above.

18. **ENTIRE AGREEMENT:** This Agreement contains the entire agreement of parties and there are no other promises or conditions in any other agreement whether oral or written. This Agreement supersedes and replaces any prior written or oral agreements between the parties.

19. **AMENDMENT:** This agreement is modifiable or amendable when the amendment is made in writing and is signed by both parties.

20. **SEVERABILITY:** when any provision of this Agreement is ruled invalid or unenforceable for any reason, the remaining provisions are valid and enforceable. When a court finds that any provision of this Agreement is invalid or unenforceable, but that by limiting such provision it is valid and enforceable, then such provision is deemed to be written, construed, and enforced as so limited.

21. **WAIVER OF CONTRACTUAL RIGHT:** The failure by either party of enforcing any provision of this Agreement is not construable as a waiver or limitation of that party's subsequent right of enforcing and compelling strict compliance with every provision of this Agreement.

22. **APPLICABLE LAW:** This Agreement is governed by the Common Law Right of Contract.

Party receiving services: Better Boat Builders

By: Sterling B. Chandler,  
Sterling B. Chandler, Proprietor

Party Providing Services: Hubert McIntosh

By: Hubert McIntosh,  
Hubert McIntosh, contractor

**NOTE:** A smaller size typeface is used in this APPENDIX for a purpose. Remember the old joke that the large print giveth and the small print taketh away? Well, if it is harder for you to read, then it is harder for a government agent to read, too! There is no law that says you have to make their job easy! Since you will *never* again place your signature on *anything* without "*knowing, understanding, and concurring with the content*" then the size of the type isn't going to keep you from being sure that the contract is something that you *want* to sign. This example of a Contract is in size 10 font, but you might well decide to print a real Contract in size 6 font.

**NOTES on 18 & 19:** These provisions are necessary, because all contracts begin as *verbal* proposals, and various tentative proposals are made by both sides before things get serious enough to begin to formalize the contract in writing. It must be made clear to both parties that all prior proposals are now *irrelevant* and only what is written in the contract is enforceable.

This Agreement can be used by Sovereigns who wish to avoid entangling contracts with the government when hiring other Sovereigns for their labor. It is equally applicable for a Sovereign who wishes to contract his own labor to a non-Sovereign. This is a very good, general-purpose labor contract.

Carefully re-read the discussion of independent contracting found on page 123.

## XXVI — STATE STATUTES

**IMPORTANT!!!** Obtain copies of your State Statutes and follow them to the letter!

**California**

No longer allows recording of documents. Use Published Notice, instead.

**Colorado**

CRS 15-2-202

**Hawaii**

Sections 512-1(2), (3), & (4); 512-2; 512-3 (Release of Powers)

**Illinois**

ILCS 45/2-5 revocation of power of Atty. Check also under Trust law and probate code

**Indiana**

Indiana code 32-3-2-1 et seq. Releases of appointment

**Iowa**

Section 559.1 through 559.9; You will use .6(1)&(4), .7, & .8

**Louisiana**

Under the heading of "mandate";  
Louisiana Civil Code, Articles 3027-3030

**Michigan**

MCLA 556.111 – 556.129

**North Carolina**

Section 39-33; 39-34, Article 6 (easiest state of all)

**Texas**

Title 10, Chap C, SubChap B  
Sec 181.051 - 181.085

**Virginia**

RCV - Release of Powers of Appointment  
Chapter 16, Section 55 - 278-286 and 286.1

**Washington**

RCW§ 11.95.010 – 11.95.050

**Wisconsin**

Wis. Stats. Chapter 702 see: 702.09, .13, & .19, regarding infants: 702.05(3)

If the statutes for your state are not listed, please send your statutes to Gamaliel. Not all state's statutes are on the Internet.

## STATES THAT EXPLICITLY RECOGNIZE CORPORATION SOLE

The statutes of these states *explicitly* mention Corporation Sole or, through explicit provisions in other statutes, provide for a tax immune corporation composed of one office to be occupied by a succession of officers. The entire list was accurate as of 1988 (*Dickinson Law Review*, The Modern Corporation Sole, James B. O'Hara, footnote #69, Vol. 93, No. 1, Fall 1988).

Alabama	(unknown)
Alaska	( <i>Very dangerous</i> , do not organize under these statutes)
Arizona	(Very compatible with Sovereignty)
California	(Complicated, but workable)
Colorado	(workable)
Hawaii	(unknown)
Idaho	(unknown)
Michigan	(unknown)
Montana	(allows for world-wide movement of church property, tax free)
Nevada	(similar to Washington Statute, but easier to read)
New Hampshire	(unknown)
North Carolina	(unknown, may have been deleted)
Oklahoma	(Trust successor statute)
Oregon	(workable)
South Carolina	(unknown)
Utah	(easy)
Washington	(fairly easy Statutes to work with)
Wyoming	(workable)

### Additionally:

Florida's courts have consistently upheld common law Corporation Sole  
Arkansas's courts have recently mentioned common law Corporation Sole  
In Washington D.C., Corporation Sole is by act of Congress  
Indiana Code recognizes corporation sole, but does not stipulate conditions

Some states have provisions for a one-person corporation that does not issue stock or have the other trappings of normal corporations. Some of these states allow for very tightly worded articles of incorporation that will approximate a Corporation Sole, but must be registered "by permission" like a normal corporation and would not have the *tax immune* status that we are seeking. "Licensed" corporations are no good for our purpose.

Gamaliel Ministries  
C/O Box 1160  
Why, Arizona 85321

# ***STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL***

- OR -

***You CAN take it with you!***

**(But please don't copy it!)**

Do your friends want to read your copy of ***STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL***? Wonderful! Every author is delighted when people want to read his work. ***Please*** share the information in this book with your friends. You may even *give* them *your* book (after all, it *is yours*), **BUT** please do not ***copy*** the book. It is not good stewardship of *your* talents. It would be a bad beginning in your journey toward Sovereignty for you to violate the **common law of copyright**. God's penalties are real. Also, you would receive *nothing* when you could easily sell your friend his own copy and be blessed with the commission. You would also be assuring that your copy was handy to help you explain a point to a person who is unfamiliar with the subjects covered in ***STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL***.

One of the most unkind acts you could perform would be copying this book and giving the copy to a friend. The human mind is so constructed that it places *value* on an item in direct proportion with the effort expended in *acquiring* the item. If you *give* the friend a pirated copy of Strategic Withdrawal, the friend's mind will forever place a value of *zero* on all information in the book. Because they already have a copy, they will never have any reason to buy the book. They will never place any value on the information that you have come to appreciate. They will never learn to live as free individuals. If you have found this information to be valuable, please do not give a pirate copy to your friends.

Many readers have asked if they could sell ***STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL***. In case you are interested, the answer has *always* been, "***Yes!***"

Gamaliel will work with any enthusiastic purchaser in insuring that the information in ***STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL*** becomes available for public access. We currently sell by volume purchases and by drop-ship. The drop-ship method is working from coast-to-coast and border to border. The customers are happy and the vendors are able to make a good commission with very little investment other than their time. We have hopes of providing a way of helping Sovereigns meet their financial obligations even if the businessmen in their community haven't yet learned how to take advantage of the savings available through hiring independent contractors.

If you like the idea of selling books on a larger scale, we have discounts, beginning at ten volumes. E-mail or write in care of GAMALIEL for the discount schedule and the drop-ship plan.

## THE SEVEN MOST ASKED QUESTIONS ABOUT SOVEREIGNTY

### 1. How do you "get away with" driving without a license?

**ANSWER:** The term "*get away with*" implies that we are breaking the law and just haven't been caught, - *yet*. Since we have no covenants with the government, we are free to travel exactly as our forefathers did in 1778. We travel by right, not by privilege. We do not break the law, that is why we do not get tickets.

### 2. What is going to happen to you when the real @#%&\* happens and martial law is declared openly? Aren't you going to be the first ones that they pick up?

**ANSWER:** I am not so naïve as to think that I was not *already* on all of those lists. All Christians are. Nor am I so naïve as to think that there is anything in the world that I could do that could induce them to take my name *off* of their lists. (Clinton's anti-terrorist legislation didn't even *provide for* taking a name off of the list!) Since what I am currently doing is allowing me to enjoy God's blessings of Liberty, freely, I have no fear. I will continue to trust God for my protection and guidance.

### 3. How do I withdraw all of the money that was paid into Social Security on my behalf? Do I just have to leave it there for them?

**ANSWER:** In short, no one has *ever* shown me a copy of a 100% refund check from Social Security. We are working on a plan to assist people in filing a lawsuit for involuntary bankruptcy against the Social Security Trust Fund. The money that was deposited to the SSTF belongs to the *beneficiaries* and the SSTF operates in a fiduciary capacity. When we file our *rescission of contract* notice, all of the deposits made on our behalf *should* be returned to us. The SSTF has been refusing to refund our deposits. We hope to be the first group to successfully initiate involuntary bankruptcy proceedings against the SSTF, because the first to file *may* have a chance to recover something. The author knows of a group of good legal minds that is forming for the purpose of assisting us in drafting the plan for forcing the SSTF to either give us our money or go bankrupt. Keep in touch with the person from whom you purchased **STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL**.

### 4. Which papers do I send to ( some office ) in order to cancel my contract with ( that agency )?

**ANSWER:** By the time you have written out and defined your problem well enough for *me* to understand it, you have most likely realized what the correct procedure is for yourself. I have heard from very few people who I felt really needed help with procedure. I have heard from a few who appeared curious to see if an author would actually answer their letter. Most have written to thank me for writing the information in such a manner that they could understand it well enough to do it for themselves. Some people have written for assurance. *To answer the question*, you need to place *all effected parties* on *notice* that you have canceled the Social Security Contract and that you are withdrawing your consent for them to interfere in your life by canceling all waiver of rights forms. You *already know* who those parties are. They are the ones who would harass you if you did not do the process right. Write your Constructive Notices to these people and send them, using the paperwork handling techniques described in **Chapter fourteen**. If you get any organized harassment, *at all*, present the harassing party with a

**Demand to Show Cause** why you should not use your constructive notice and the evidence of their harassment as evidence justifying a default judgment in a Civil Rights Suit. You should get results.

**5. Is it really necessary to revoke this or that contract?**

**ANSWER:** It *is necessary* to revoke or terminate *any and all* contracts or associations that use the *Social Security Number* and/or any other instrument that causes jurisdiction of the U.S. government to attach. Anything and everything that causes you to become an instrumentality of the United States must be canceled. This includes driver's licenses, many insurance policies, bank accounts, etc. Although many things we think of as contracts are actually "waivers of rights" or "consent forms," it is safest to think of them and to treat them all as if they were contracts. Our goal is to live a peaceful, prosperous, and worry-free life. If it would help *you* to sleep better if you cancel something that I do not care about, then by all means, deal with what *you* believe to be a problem.

We have certain unalienable rights. If the government, a corporation, or an individual is *trespassing* on those rights, then we need to stop them. *Before* we use physical force to resist, we are obligated by conscience to carefully examine our own actions and see if we have said or signed anything that could have created the presumption that we have *waived* our rights. If they have *reason to believe* that we have waived our rights, then they have *reason to believe* that they *are not trespassing* on our rights. If we may reclaim our rights and end the trespass simply by filing a paper notifying them of their condition of trespass, then by all means, file the paper and live peaceably with all men. If we can not end the trespass with administrative means, our next option is to use the courts, - common law courts. If the courts are corrupt, then we put the judges who are found guilty of corruption to the penalty of felony breach of oath. Then we go after the *other* trespassers upon our rights. The instant that they stop trespassing, we have no further cause to *defend* our rights. At that time, Peace and Harmony will prevail.

**6. How do I know when it is time to send in the notices?**

**ANSWER:** When you have sufficiently protected your assets. If you have transferred all of your bank accounts to your Corporation Sole, to your Offshore S.A., or to your Trust; you have protected the title to all of your land in a similar manner, you either own no automobiles or you have sold them to your umbrella agency (SA, Trust, or Corp. Sole), then you are ready to serve notice.

**7. How do I protect my children? Do I file the notices or do they?**

**ANSWER:** This depends on the age of the children and what contracts bind them. If the children are under eighteen, then you will have to revoke their SSN's over *your* signature. If they have a driver's license, then *they* will have to revoke that signature. The Social Security Administration has procedures to remove SSN's that are issued at birth. Go to the local office and don't leave until they have removed the numbers from your children.

Some states have specific statutes that deal with revoking powers of appointment over minors. If your state has these laws, then follow them. Procedures under state statute supercede federal regulations.

PRODUCTS AND SERVICES AVAILABLE FROM GAMALIEL MINISTRIES

**PUBLICATIONS**

<b>STRATEGIC WITHDRAWAL</b> - or - <i>You CAN take it with you!</i>	\$300.00
The complete guide for removing legal disabilities	S/H \$3.00
<b>Christian Patriotism</b> , by A. T. Jones, (c) 1900	\$7.50
<i>The definitive work on Citizenship of Christians [Philippians 3:20]</i>	
<b>"Travel by Right"</b> , Legal Brief, formatted and annotated by Gamaliel	\$25.00
The Law on traveling without State-Issued permission	

**AUDIO TAPES by Carl Klang**  
*America's #1 Patriotic Folksinger*

America, America	\$12.00
Watch out for Martial Law	\$12.00
It's Dangerous to be Right When the Government is Wrong	\$12.00
We Want This Country Back	\$12.00
HalleluYahweh (most are songs of praise)	\$12.00
The News Behind the News	<u>\$12.00</u>
	Total \$60.00
	Order all six tapes for <u>\$54.00</u>
	Save \$6.00

[You may bulk order for resale directly from Carl Klang]

**SERVICES**

**AVAILABLE FROM GAMALIEL**

**International Motorist Qualification**, Auto ID plates, Loan/Lien papers by Trust or SA,  
Promissory Notes, other specialized paperwork: prices on request

**FROM ANY ANDERSON'S ARK ASSOCIATES INFORMATION OFFICER**

<b>Offshore Trust, Officer appointment</b>	\$3,700.00
Annual renewal - \$400	
<b>Offshore S.A. (Anonymous Corporation), Agency appointment</b>	\$4,200.00
Annual renewal - \$600	
<b>Offshore VISA account</b> Initial deposit \$1,250 plus set-up fee \$750.00	\$2,000.00
Annual \$300 administrative fee	
Account may be drawn down to \$75.00. <i>Use for petty-cash from Offshore Trust account or S.A. Agent's office account</i>	
<b>SPECIAL OFFER!!</b> Limited Authority S.A. contract <i>with</i> a Visa Account	\$4,500.00

Prices subject to change without notice.

Your right to become an American instead of a U.S. citizen/subject.

15 Statutes at Large, Chapter 249 (Section 1), July 27, 1868

Chapter CCXLIX. – An Act concerning the Rights of American Citizens in foreign States

**Whereas** the right of expatriation is a natural and inherent right of all people, indispensable to the enjoyment of the rights of life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness;

**And** whereas in recognition of this principle this government has freely received emigrants from all nations, and invested them with the rights of citizenship;

**And** whereas it is claimed that such American citizens, with their descendants, are subjects of foreign states, owing allegiance to governments thereof;

**And** whereas it is necessary to the maintenance of public peace, and that this claim of foreign allegiance should be promptly and finally disavowed:

**Therefore**, Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America, in Congress assembled:

**That** any declaration, instruction, opinion, order, or decision, of any officer of this government, which denies, restricts, impairs, or questions the right of expatriation, is hereby declared inconsistent with the fundamental principles of this government.

In this Public Law, enacted eighteen days after the fourteenth amendment was supposedly ratified, we see that even the people born in Washington, DC and on Military Reservations possess the right of expatriation in order to become Citizens of the several states.